A SPANISH GRAMMAR,

FIRST COLLECTED AND PVBLISHED BY *RICHARD PERCIVALE Gent.* Now augmented and increaſed, with the declining of all the Irregular and hard Verbs in that Tongue, with diuers other eſpeciall Rules and neceſſary Notes for all ſuch as ſhall be deſirous to attaine the perfection of the SPANISH TONGVE.

Done by *Iohn Minſheu* Profeſſor of Languages in *LONDON.*

HEREVNTO FOR THE YOVNG beginners learning and eaſe, are annexed Speeches, Phraſes, and Prouerbs, expounded out of diuers Authors, ſetting downe the line and the leafe where in the ſame bookes they ſhall finde them, whereby they may not only vnderſtand them, but by them vnderſtand others, and the reſt as they ſhall meet with them.

Vireſcit vulnere Virtus.

¶ Printed at *London* by IOHN HAVILAND for *William Aſpley.* 1623.

XUM

A SPANISH GRAMMAR,

TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFVLL GENTLEMEN Students of GRAYES INNE, health and happineſſe: and to the affected to Languages there, daily increaſe, with perfect accompliſhment of the moſt commendable qualities.

VCius *a famous Roman meeting on a time with the Emperor* Marcus, *asked him whither he went: who anſwered, I am going to* Sextus, vt diſcam quod nondum ſcio, *that I may learne that which I doe not yet know.* Diogenes *the Philoſopher went to* Athens *to* Antiſthenes *to learne of him ſomewhat that hee was ignorant of; but* Antiſthenes *not willing to impart at that time any of his doctrine, repulſed him: the other left not off his purpoſe, but more and more importuned him, in ſuch ſort, that* Antiſthenes *taking vp a ſtaffe to driue him away,* Diogenes *ſtretched out his necke, willing him to ſtrike on hardly, for he ſhould not finde a ſtaffe ſo hard, that could driue him from him ſo long as he might learne any matter by him worthie the hearing. I ſpeake this Gentlemen, meaning none of you to be bound by their example, ſeeing one was an Emperor and might doe what he liſt, and the other a Cinick Philoſopher that would doe that he ought: therefore if a man haue any learning or quality, let him bring it to you, and if it be too tedious vnto you, or hinder your ſport, rather than be troubled with him, bob him or flout and ſcoffe him away. Be not imitators of* Demoſthenes *which ſpent more oile in the lampe in ſtudying to enrich his minde, than wine to comfort his body; but rather waſte your wine and ſpare your candles: neither be ſo fooliſh as* Cleanthes *the Philoſopher, that drew water in the night that he might follow his ſtudie in the day; rather take your eaſe in the night and your pleaſure in the day, becauſe* Mutantur tempora & nos mutamur in illis. *Yet Gentlemen, if you doe but ſet before your eies theſe famous men, which haue beene and are of the houſe you now remaine in, (the names of ſome few I can now recite) as Sir* Nicholas Bacon *Lord Keeper, Lord* Burleigh *Lord Treaſurer, Sir* Walter Mildmay, *and Sir* Francis Walſingham, *learned* Fitzherbert *Lord chiefe Iuſtice of the Common pleas, which abridged the Law, and Sir* William Stanford, *which wrote the pleas of the*

the crowne, *Sergeant* Yelverton, *Sergeant* Daniel, *Sergeant* Spurling, *Maſter* Brograue, *Maſter* Stanhop, *Maſter* Heſquit, *Maſter* Anthony *and Maſter* Francis Bacon, *with diuers others, might well moue you to conſider that* Qui veult plus qu'vn autre valoir, doibt plus qu'vn autre ſcauoir: *He that will be eſteemed aboue another man, muſt haue more knowledge then another man: And* Meglio eſſer mendicante che ignorante, *Better to be a beggar than barren of good letters. But theſe letters are painfully purchaſed, why* Petit ardua virtus; Difficilis virtutis via; Difficilia quæ pulchra: *Therefore* Pythagoras *counſelled his familiar friends that they ſhould chuſe out the beſt kinde of life, although the moſt difficult: and* Saluſt *ſaith, deckings pertaine to women, and trauels belong to men: and* Seneca *affirmeth, that baſe is that honour which is gotten with idleneſſe, which the Roman policy when it flouriſhed confirmed by an ancient law duly kept, that euery father that had children of the age of ten yeares ſhould become ſurety for them, that they ſhould not liue idle, or commit any exceſſe, which was ſo nearely looked vnto, that they publikely chaſtiſed* Cato *the Cenſors ſonne for a ſaucineſſe committed, and baniſhed a brother of good old* Ciña *for liuing idlie among them. None durſt preſume to goe into the ſtreets but hee carried ſome token in his hand what kinde of life or ſtudie he followed, which if in theſe times it were in force, how many ſtreet walkers would retire themſelues to ſome vertuous ſtudies. But me thinke I heare ſome ſay,* Ars longa & vita breuis, *I anſwer them with the Thebane Philoſopher, which in the* 75. *Olympiade, came to the ſolemne ſports kept about the citie Olympia in honour of* Iupiter, *who had made all the apparell he ware with his owne hands: his ſhooes he had ſowed, his ſhirt he had wouen, being demanded where he had learned ſo many mens arts, anſwered, In the beginning there was but one art at all, and that the ſloth of men had cauſed that one to be diuided into many, and how euery particular man with diligence and labour might obtaine to the knowledge of that that all men in generall had knowledge of. To*

Pythagoras.

this purpoſe Pythagoras *ſaid,* He that knoweth not what he ought to know, is a brute beaſt among men: He that knoweth no more than he hath need of, is a man among brute beaſts: He that knoweth all that may be knowne, is a God among men. *So many examples preſent themſelues, that rather time would faile than matter herein, and for that my caſe ſtandeth now rather to demand remedie and not giue counſell, or to giue thankes for good turnes receiued, and not preſcribe precepts, I thinke good briefly and plainly to ſhew vnto you how hauing found my ſelfe beholding to ſome of you whom I had read vnto in the tongues, I thought nothing could better agree with my profeſſion as to ſhew my gratefull minde towards you, than by labouring for your eaſe, in theſe inſtructions of the Spaniſh tongue: which if they be thankefully receiued, I ſhall thinke my labour well imploied. Yet before I could make an end of this and the Dictionarie, I did as* Robertus Stephanus *ſaith of himſelfe in gathering together his Dictionaries called* Theſaurus linguæ Græcæ & Latinæ; *I haue made* Theſaurum, *that is, a Treaſure for others, but thereby haue made my ſelfe a beggar, whereof ſome of the right vertuous and worthy gentlemen of that your houſe, (to whom I am moſt beholding, and therefore ſtand moſt in affection bound) vnderſtanding, wiſhed me to goe forward in ſo good a worke, and not to giue ouer for ſome wants: which then of themſelues they ſupplied,*

plied, whose good kindnesse if I forget, I wish the law of Draco, *(which was to punish with death, if there were any found so vnthankfull as not to requite a good turne, or at least to forbeare to acknowledge his benefactors for the same) might be inflicted on me: for there can be no greater iniurie offered to a free minde, than to be reputed ingratefull: although in these daies foure as great euils left vnpunished as those that are punished,* Vntemperateneſſe, Vnſhamefaſtneſſe, Vnfaithfulneſſe, *and* Vnthankfulneſſe. *But to begin with my Benefactors in this worke in order as they began with me in Grates Inne, first Master* William Willoughby, *a Gentleman as vertuously minded and of as good cariage as the rest: next Master* Henry Bing, *whose excellent learning, placed together with such gentlemanlike conditions makes him beloued among the Elders, and honoured among the younger sort: after him Master* Francis Barneham, *and Master* Iames Hewes, *endued with exceeding good wits, and no lesse good natures: I may not forget the good worths of Master* Robert Hill, *and Master* Cheeke, *Gentlemen well studied in the most commendable kindes of learning: Master* Dauiſon *of excellent learning, wit and vertues: Master* Helmes *and Master* Gill, *both for their good parts better knowne than I can heere set downe: Master* Thomas Maſon, *and Master* Iohn Roberts, *adorned with ornaments of languages, to their other learning and vertues: Master* Archer *as he is well read in language, so is he a good fauourer of learning. The rest of the well accompliſht young Gentlemen whom I know not, I say of them as my minde is towards them best: Gentlemen, if for these praises you shall one play on another, I pray you cast all on me, for I protest none of them euer knew that I meant to write vnto them, much lesse put any of their names in print. Thus wishing to you as much as* Cicero *writing to his friend* Atticus, *would limit to be wished to his deareſt friends, viz. To enioy health, to poſſeſſe honour, and neuer to ſuffer want, I reſt*

At your command

IOHN MINSHEU.

TO THE READER.

IF it be vanity and vexation of minde, for a man to toile in this life to gather riches together, when he knowes not whether he be wiſe or fooliſh that ſhall enioy it: we may thinke the ſweat of our ſpirits and the toile of our bodies, to be altogether vaine, which write or print, when we cannot tell whether they will proue ſober or franticke, to whom we leaue the poſſeſſion of our trauels. But the Spaniard ſaith, *Quien de miédo ſe murió de cagaxónes le hizièron la ſepoltura*; and becauſe as the Italian ſaying is, *A molti puzza l'ambro*, Amber is accounted ſtinking by many: and *Dal aſino non ne hai che calzi & petti:* I am reſolued for this once to put on Merchants eares, to heare with patience euery mans ſpeech and diſpraiſings of his wares, becauſe *Quot homines tot ſententiæ*, So many men, ſo many mindes. Therefore he that ſhould leaue off any good worke for any mans ill ſpeech, may well be likened to that poore ſilly fellow, which on a time went with one of his ſonnes with his Aſſe before him to the wood, to fetch him a load thereof for his wife and children; and meeting trauellers by the way, ſome miſliking with him that he ſhould goe on foot, and let his Aſſe goe leere; others, that he road himſelfe, and ſuffered his childe to goe a foot; others, that hee loaded the poore Aſſe with two perſons, being ſcarce able to carrie himſelfe; others, when he left his ſonne alone riding, and himſelfe goe on foot; in ſuch ſort that the countrey fellow could not tell what to doe, ſeeing doe what he could, ſtill he found reprehenders: whereupon he would goe no further forward, but returned ſad home to his houſe without wood, where he remained for feare of fault-finders, till he and his houſhold were neere ſtarued with cold, till at laſt finding his owne ſimplicitie, he returned to the wood, and to as many as hee met by the way, he ſaid, *He that paſſeth for other mens ſpeeches and repreefes, endureth cold and a thouſand griefes*; and he that will throw a ſtone at euery dogge, ſhall haue a weary arme: but I hope, *Qui bien ſerá, bien aurá:* And for all the dogs barking, the Moone will ſtand where it did. And I ſay to the malicious, *Mets ta main ſouvent en ton ſein, & tu ne meſdiràs de ton prochain.* And let them remember, that *Chi fa quello che non deve, gli avien quel che non crede:* According to a Hiſtory I haue read of an Emperour, who had his brothers ſonne for his cupbearer: The Emperors Steward and vncle, for enuie perſwaded the cupbearer that his breath did ſtinke, and wiſhed therefore to turne his face from the Emperour when he deliuered the cup till remedy were found: forthwith he told the Emperour, that his cupbearer had defamed him to all his Court,

by

by ſaying his breath did ſtinke; and to know it for a certaintie, he likewiſe told him how he ſhould ſee the cup-bearer turne away his face from him when he came neere him; whereupon the Emperor conceiued ſuch wrath againſt him, (as the ſaying is, The anger of a Prince the meſſenger of death) that hee ſent expreſſe command to his burners of bricke, that they ſhould burne that man that came vnto them firſt the next morrow; and likewiſe commanded his cup-bearer to be there ſo early that none might bee before him: on the mortow morning very early the cup-bearer going, and paſſing by a Church in the way, went in and fell into ſuch a ſound ſleepe, that it was the afternoone before he could awake. The Steward in the meane time to ſee the euent of the Cup-bearer, went and was burned himſelfe aliue. The cub-bearer at his returne ſignified to the Emperor what had hapned, and alſo was deſirous to know of the Emperour why he ſhould ſend him thither, &c. If neither Hiſtories nor reaſon perſwade them, they muſt needs be anſwered with ſilence, and ſo gentle Reader I reſt ſilent from troubling thee or them herewith any longer, more grieued at my miſhap and diſabilitie, than wanting good will or liking to doe thee ſeruice. *Hæc raptim. Vale.*

John Minsheu.

In opus M. Minſheui edendum,

Iohannis Keperi generoſi

ἐξαχὲρ.

Qui cupis auriferi contingere flumen Iberi
Vocibus & veris noſcere gentis opes,
Vel mores, vel quas exercet Iberia merces,
Heſperiam & totam noſcere quiſquis aues:
Minſhæum *legito, lectum (mihi crede) probabis,*
Ingenium, genium, munera, verba, fidem:
Qui totidem ſubijt noctéſque diéſque labores,
Et flores veluti ſedula carpſit apes;
Qui tibi, qui patriæ, ſeſe ſumptumque dicauit,
Edidit, & tantæ ſedulitatis opus,
Aut lauda, aut ſaltem noli mordere, latrando
Zoile, tabificus, ne videare, canis.

Soneto de un capitan Eſpañol

del Autór.

De un diamantino muro circuydo
Con puertas de metál ynpenetrable;
Y por guarda un dragón fiero eſpantáble,
Era el huérto de Atlánte defendido:
Mas ſiendo del fuerte Ercules vençido,
Fue abierta la puerta yncontraſtable,
Y las pomas de précio yneſtimáble
Gozáron luego quantos han querido,
Vos *Mincheu* ſoys el Ercules famoſo,
Que a peſar de la ynbidia (dragon fiero)
Abriſtes puerta al huerto ameno umbroſo,
De la yſpanica lengua, que primero,
Cerrada eſtubo alyngles curioſo,
Do gozara pomas de oro verdadero.

THE PROEME.

Paniſh is a ſpeech, whereof in times paſt (in Spaine) there hath beene foure kinds vſed: The firſt and ancienteſt is the Biskaine, which was the ſpeech of the prouince of Biskay and Nauarre: it hath his originall from the Caldean tongue, as the learned in them both affirme, to whom it plainly appeareth that this is of greateſt antiquitie.

Foure ſorts of Spaniſh.
1. Biskay tongue moſt ancient. This tongue drawne from the Caldean.

The next is that which was ſpoken in the kingdome of Granado, and in part in the kingdomes of Andaluzía, Valencia, and Aragon, and was the Arabique, whoſe originall is the Hebrew almoſt among them quite worne out, yet to this day they keepe the pronunciation of ſome of their letters ſtill, as ç, G, j, X, Z.

2. Arabique tongue in old time vſed in Granado, Andaluzia, Valencia, and Aragon, and yet remaine it in the pronunciation of theſe letters, ç, G, j, x, z.

The third is the Catalan, which is a kinde of French, and had his beginning from the prouince of Gaſcoigne, from the ancient citie Limojes: they ſpake this in the kingdomes of Cataluna, Mallorca, Menorca, Iuiça and Cerdena. This Catalan tongue was called Prouençall: and the Italians confeſſe that the Prouençals were the firſt inuentors of their rimes and verſes, which are ſo much priſed in Italie where Petraque, Boccace, and Dante, giue ſome teſtimonie in retaining their words in many places.

3. Catalan tongue or Prouençal, a kinde of French, had originall from Gaſcoigne, and was vſed in Cataluña, Mallorca, Juiça, Cerdeña.

The fourth is that which is now at this day commonly vſed and ſpoken thorow all Spaine, and is called Léngua vulgár, the mother tongue, otherwiſe Léngua Caſtellána, or Eſpañola, the Caſtilian or Spaniſh tongue, principally vſed in Aragon, Andalucía, Múrcia, Caſtilla, Nueua, and Veja, León: alſo in Portugall, although the Portugall tongue haue ſuch difference in certaine words and pronunciations, that it may well be called a language by it ſelfe, euen as the Engliſh and Scottiſh, yet in truth, it is not ſo ſeuered, but that they ſprang from one fountaine, and haue one deſcendence.

4. The Spaniſh now vſed. Difference betweene the Spaniſh and Portugall tongue.

This Lengua vulgár, or Spaniſh tongue, draweth his originall from the Latine or Roman, and becauſe the Roman conquerours were moſt politicke in prouiding for the continuance of their eſtates and language to their poſteritie, by planting where they woon, * Colonies and garriſons; as alſo not permitting any ſtranger to the priuiledge of their lawes or freedome of their townes, to buy, ſell, or traffique, but in the Roman or Latine tongue, as in Spaine they haue done: Therefore the Spaniſh retaineth ſtill to this day ſo much of the Latine tongue. And by reaſon of the Incurſion and ouerrunning of ſo many ſtrange nations, as the Africans inhabiting about Carthage, called Carthaginians, Gothes, Huns, and Vandals, which ceaſed not till they had ouerrunne the moſt part of Europe, yet ſo ſetled themſelues in Andaluzía in Spaine, that they called it by their owne name Vandaluzia or Vandalia of Vandalles, as alſo

* A Colonie is a place inhabited, whither people are ſent to dwell: or people ſent to inhabite ſuch place: or a citie, the people whereof once came from another citie or countrey.

Why the Spaniſh keepeth ſo much of the Latine.

Andaluzia, whereof firſt ſo named.

How the Moores first entred and conquered Spain. Chro of Spaine.

Africans inhabiting Mauritania called Moores, whose first comming in, proceeded from the licentious liuing and vnbridled lust of Don Rodrígo *then king, in dishonouring and deflowring a Ladie called* Cáva *the daughter of Earle* Iulian, *one of his Nobles.*

By meanes hereof, this language remaineth so altered and changed from his owne first propertie and nature, admitting words, accents, and pronunciations of other strange nations, as it is become a language of it selfe compounded of the Latine and aboue named tongues: but yet so, that it hath much more of the Latine than of all the other, whereby it may be called the Latine tongue altered or corrupted.

For Spanish words comming from the Latine, marke the table here following and their like.

Spanish words drawne from the Moorish tongue begin much with Al, *as* Alcúza, *a vessell for oyle:* Alfidél, *or* Alfilér, *a pin:* Almúd, *a measure, a pecke:* Alguarísmo, *Arithmeticke:* Almoháda, *a pillow, &c. or in* ç, *as* çaherír, *to vpbraid,* çahórda, *a hogstie: or sound on* r, *or* x, Almaráxa, *an ewer of glasse:* Xabón, *soape:* Almoradúx, *marjoram:* Arredrár, *to driue away:* Arrélde, *foure pound weight, &c. also in* z, *as* Zagál, *a shepherd. And at this day the Moores in speaking Spanish for* júro a Dios, *I sweare by God, they say* jureux a Deux: *for* Hombre, *they say* Homber: *for* Vuéstra mercéd, *your worship or mastership, they say* Voxár mérxe.

Generall

Generall Obſeruations from the Latine for the framing of the SPANISH.

Subſtantiues of the Latines in *as*, as *Charitas, Maieſtas, Crudelitas, Ciuitas, Fidelitas, Securitas, Obſcuritas, Conformitas, Calamitas, Voluntas, &c.* in Spaniſh thus, Caridád. Mageſtád. Crueldád. Ciudád. Fedelidád. Seguridád. Eſcuridád. Conformidád. Calamidád. Voluntád.

The moſt part of words in Latine beginning with *Pl*, changed in Ll, as *Plenus, Planus, Plunia, Plaga, Plorare*, In Spaniſh, Lléno. Lláno. Llúvia. Llága. Llorár.

In like ſort *F.* turned into *H*, as *Facere, Faba, Fax, Falco, Farina, Fator, Formoſus, Ferrum, Feruor*, Spaniſh, Hazér. Háva. Héz. Halcón. Harína. Hedór. Hermóſo, Hiérro, Hervór.

The Latine ending in *io*, made Spaniſh by putting n to it, as *Educatio, Religio, Electio*, Spaniſh, Educación. Religión. Elecion.

The Latine ending in *tum*, by changing *um* into o, as *Ornamentum, Experimentum, Exemplum*, Spaniſh, Ornaménto, Experiménto, Exémplo.

The Latine ending in *lis*, by taking away *is*, as *Materialis, Finalis, Subtilis, Debilis, &c.* Spaniſh, Materiál. Finál. Sutíl. Débil.

The Latine ending in the Infinitiue mode in *e*, by taking away *e* by *Apocope*, as *Caſtigare, Amare, Tenere, Perdere, Sentire, Salire*, Spaniſh, Caſtigár. Amár. Tenér. Perdér. Sentír. Salír.

By

By adding to the end of a word by *Paragoge*, as { *Apoſtema*, *Appetere*, *Anas*, } Spaniſh, { Apoſtemacion. Apetecér. Anade. }

By adding to the middle of a word by *Epentheſis*, as { *Certum*, *Cœlum*, *Membrum*, *Meſſis*, } Spaniſh, { Ciérto. Ciélo. Miémbro. Miéſſe. }

By adding to the beginning of a word by *Proſtheſis*, as { *Plumeſcere*, *Capiſtrare*, *Scala*, *Scandalum*, } Spaniſh, { Emplumecér. Encabiſtrár. Eſcála. Eſcándalo. }

By changing a letter by *Metatheſis*, in the middle of a word, of the ſecond perſon plurall of the Imperatiue mood, as D and L changing places, as for Caſtigádle, they write Caſtigalde, for Dezídle, they ſay and write Dezílde.

The Spaniſh ſheweth his originall from the Latine, although by corruption many words haue changed letters, as in theſe following & their like, as { a b c e f g } into { e u g i h y } as { *Lac*, milke, Léche. *Caſens*, chéſe, Quéſo. *Barba*, a beard, Bárva. *Bibo*, I drinke, Bévo. *Amicus*, a frīēd, amígo. *Acutus*, ſharp, agudo *Directus*, directed, derigído. *lectus*, read, leýdo *Ferrū*, irō, hiérro. *facere*, to make or do, hazér *Regnum*, a kingdome, Reyno. }

I proceéd no further herein, but leaue euery Latiniſt to conſider of them as he ſhall méet with them by reading, whereby he ſhall manifeſtly perceiue by the multitude of words in this tongue deriued from the Latine, how eaſie it is for euery meane ſcholler ſpédily to obtaine the knowledge of the ſame, and with theſe rules and precepts, which here I ſhall ſet downe, I doubt not but that euery one (deſirous thereof) may with facilitie and ſhort time ſpeake it and write it more than meanly: the which the better to performe, I take it the beſt order (according to the ſaying, *Qui bene diuidit bene docet*, He that diuideth the matter, he handleth well, teacheth well) to diuide this preſent Grammar, into *Orthographie*, *Proſodie*, *Etymologie* and *Syntaxis*, of which though I ſhall not deale with all of all that may be ſaid, yet at leaſt that ſhall be neceſſary to be ſaid for the inſtruction of the learner in this tongue.

No difficultie in the Spaniſh tongue or other vulgar tongues comming from the Latine.

OF

OF ORTHOGRAPHIE

Of Grammar and hir parts.

Definition of Grammar.

Grammar, is an art teaching the right rules of true ſpeaking and wꝛiting, and it is deriued from the Gꝛeeke wꝛd γραμμα, which is *litera*, as much as to ſay, *ſcientia literaria*, a knowledge of letters.

Diuiſion of Grammar.

Grammar, accoꝛding to *Quintilian*, is twofold: *Hiſtoricall* and *Methodicall*.
Hiſtoricall, gotten by imitation of Authoꝛs.
Methodicall, is taught by pꝛecepts, which onely we here handle.

Subdiuiſion of Gꝛammar.

Diuiſion of Grammar.

Grammar Methodicall is diuided into foure parts, *Orthography*, *Proſody*, *Etymology*, and *Syntaxis*.
Orthography, conuerſant in letters.
Proſody, in ſyllables.
Etymology, in wꝛds.
Syntaxis, in ſentences.

Propertie of the foure parts of Grammar.

Orthographie, of the Gꝛeeke wꝛd ὀρθὸς right, γραφὴ wꝛiting.
Proſodia, of πρὸς, *i.* ad, & ὠδὴ, *Cantus*, that is, *Accentus*.
Etymologia, of Ετυμὸς, true, λόγος ſpeech.
Syntaxis, of σὺν, *i.* con, & τάσσω, *ordino*, *quaſi*, coordinatio.

Definition of Orthographie.

Orthographie is a right rule of true wꝛiting, as befoꝛe of ὀρθὸς right, γραφὴ wꝛiting, whereby euerie wꝛd is to be ſet downe with his true letters, as Cierto, certaine, not Sierto.

Definition of Orthopœia.

Hereto belongeth *Orthopœia*, which is a right rule of true ſpeaking, of ὀρθὸς right, ἔπος wꝛd, that in ſpeaking men pꝛonounce not moꝛe groſſe oꝛ ſmal, then the nature of language wil allow, oꝛ otherwiſe then the accuſtomed manner of pꝛonunciation vſually permitted therein, as Vino, wine, not to pꝛonounce it as Engliſhmen doe, Veino, but ſmaller as they pꝛonounce the double ee, Veeno, Dios, God, not Deios, but Dheeos. But of this hereafter in the letters moꝛe at large.

The force of Letters.

And becauſe *Orthographie* (the foꝛmer part of our Gꝛammar) chiefly conſiſteth in the true wꝛiting of euery wꝛd with his right letters: It muſt of neceſſitie follow, that whoſoeuer ſpeaketh, oꝛ heareth a tongue ſpoken in his pꝛoper *Idioma*, and would wꝛite downe the ſame ſo ſpoken, that he know the power and pꝛopꝛietie of each letter in that tongue (becauſe of letters are framed ſyllables, and of ſyllables are made wꝛds, and of wꝛds the whole ſpeech, and language) the which neglected, muſt neds bꝛing a confuſion to the learner, and little oꝛ no fruit to the Teachers labour. Theꝛefoꝛe to our purpoſe.

Letters.

There are in the Spaniſh tongue 27. letters, whereof 24. are ſingle, and thꝛee double.
The ſingle, A.b.c.ç d.e.f g.h.i.j.k.l.m.n.o.p.q.r.ſ.t.v.x.y.z.

Double letters.

The double are theſe, ch. ll. ñ.

Nota.

If any aſke the queſtion, why the Spaniſh, being deſcended from the Latine, hath in it moꝛe letters then the Latine: I anſwer, that although it be now (foꝛ the moſt part of wꝛds therein) coꝛrupt and bꝛoken Latine, yet it had at the firſt (as in the Pꝛoeme befoꝛe going) his oꝛiginall from the *Caldean*, *Arabique*, and *Moores* tongue, of which they reſerue ſome * letters.

* ç.g.j.x.z.

But now to our letters as they are in oꝛder in the Alphabet oꝛ croſſe row, without beginning with the vowels, and then ſkipping from one conſonant to another, diſtracting the memoꝛie of the young beginner in a tongue, which would much better retaine the pꝛecepts giuen thereon, ſo they might not be dꝛiuen to a new oꝛder of reckoning their letters, differing from that in their childhood they learned, and now can hardly be dꝛawne from.

A Is ſounded plainely, with opening the mouth as in the Latine, French, and Italian, as in Engliſh, man, can: ſo in Spaniſh, Manáda, a flocke, Enſaláda, a ſalade of herbs.

B Is as the Latine, and is called *litera labialis*, one of the labiall oꝛ lip letters, becauſe it cannot be pꝛonounced without toyning the lips together. It is pꝛonounced as in Engliſh, baker, baſket: ſo in Spaniſh, Bacía, a bowle, Bárro, clay, but in the middeſt of a wꝛd, except the wꝛd come of the Latine, the Spaniard vſually confoundeth it with V conſonant, and ſoundeth

B and V consonant, written and pronounced one for another.

soundeth it as V consonant, as Trabájo, trauell, they pronounce Travájo: Palábras, words, they sound Palávras: Cábra, a goat, Cávra: Labór, labour, Lavór: Albárda, a pakſaddle, Alvárda: Alabárda, a holbard, Alavárda: ſo oftentimes in the beginning of a word, as Baylár, to dance, Vaylár: Baſquiña, a peticoat, a kirtle, Vaſquiña: Bellóta, an acorne, Vellóta: Bermejo, red colour, Vermejo: Bexíca, a bladder, Vexíca. Wherefore I aduiſe the ſtudious in the Spaniſh tongue, if he finde not a word in the Dictionarie, in one of theſe letters, let him turne to the other: as if he find not Báyo, which is vſed in good Authors for Bay coloured, or Bayard, let him looke Váyo, and there he ſhall find the ſame: If not Vañár, to bathe, looke Bañár: If not Vóz, looke Bóz, a voice.

Nota.

B caſt away.

B In the middeſt of a word going before another conſonant, and making the pronunciation harder, is cut off in Spaniſh, as Subtil, they write, Sutil, Abſénte, Auſénte, Obſcúro, Oſcúro, or Eſcúro.

C This letter hath two manner of ſoundings according to the vowels that follow it. If a o or u follow it, he is ſounded as k, as in Cára, a face, Cóco, wheell, Cuchára, a ſpoone: ſo likewiſe in the middle of a word, as Deſcánſo, reſt, Eſcória, drooſſe, Eſcudilla, a diſh: but going before e or i pronounce almoſt as the Italian z, as *Prudenza, Diſcalzo*, or their t before ia or io, as *Prudentia, Iuſtificatione*, Cecína, powdred fleſh, Ciruéla, a plum.

C caſt away.

C Before t, cut off, as Acto, an act: the Spaniard ſaith Áto: Pacto, a couenant, Páto.

Ç Marked with a dash vnder it thus, ç, called ç Cerilla, or ç Cedílla, is proper to the Arabique tongue, from whence it was firſt taken: it is ſounded by putting the tongue to the rankes of the teeth, as the French ç, *Vuença*, or very neere: the Italian z, as *Diligenza, Scienza*. This ç muſt be ſo pronounced, whether it be at the beginning, end, or middle of a word, though a o or u follow: and is ſounded as in Engliſh Thſ, as çaraguélles, great gaſcoine or Spaniſh hoſe, çoçóbras, croſſe blowes of fortune, çúne, bzimſtone: pronounce Thſaraguélles, Thſoſóbras, Thſúſre, in like manner before e and i, as çenogiles, garters, çiénto, a hundred: pronounce Thſenogíles, Thſiénto.

ç pronounced as the Italian z.

ç pronounced as Engliſh Thſ.

D Is pronounced in the beginning of a word, as in Latine, French, and Italian: as in Engliſh, Dagger, Doctor: ſo in Spaniſh, Dága, a dagger, Dóze, a dolen: this word Dios is except from this rule, and is pronounced as theſe that follow, that is, if d come in the middeſt or end of a word, you muſt pronounce him as ð in Gzæke, as dh in Engliſh, as Cáda, euery, Cádha, fidelidád, fidelitie, fidhelidhadh.

D pronounced as Dh.

E Is as the Latine, and the Italian, and as in Engliſh, Bend, Lend: ſo in Spaniſh, Bendezír, to bleſſe, Bevér, to drinke: and it muſt neuer be ſounded ſo ſmall as the Engliſh æ, as fæ, wæ: nor ſo broad as the French doe their e feminine, as *Femme*, a woman, pronounced Famma, but betwixt both as firſt aboue.

F Is as the Latine and the Italian tongues, and inſt as the Engliſh. The Spaniard writeth him when the Latines write *Ph*, as *Philoſophus*, in Spaniſh Filóſofo.

G Anſwerable to the Hebrue *Gimel*, hath two maner of ſoundings according to the vowels which follow it, if a o or u immediatly follow, it is pronounced as in the Latine, *Gabriel, Gorgias, Gubernator*: Italian, *Galante, Gotta, Guſtare*: French, *Garçon, Gourmand*: as in Engliſh, Gate, Gold, Gutter: ſo in Spaniſh, Gáfo, a lazar, a leper, Gófo, rude, Gúla, gluttonie.

Ga.
Go, Gu.
Gua.

But if after the u immediatly come a, as Guante, a glowe, ſound Gwante: Agua, water, Agwa: Mengua, want, Mengwa.

Gue, Gui, like Ghe, Ghi.

But if after u follow e or i, pronounce as the French *Guerre, Guide*: as in Engliſh Gueſt, guide: ſo in Spaniſh Guérra, warre, Guía, a guide: ſound Gherra, Ghia, except theſe words following, Guéro, adle, Aguéro, ſothſaying, Garguéro, the throat, Sirguéro, a drawer or tower of a boat with a roape, Hoguéro, a woodpile, Triguéro, a ſparrow that lieth in the wheat, Ciguéna, a ſtorke, Pediguéno, wanton, Halaguéño, flattering, Siguénça, a citie of Spaine, Verguénça, ſhame, Aguélo, a grandfather, Deguéllo, a beheading, Reguéldo, belking, Vnguénto, ointment: and words that come of the Infinitiue mode in Guár, as Enxaguár, to waſh, Enxágue, Menguár, to want, Mengue.

Ge, Gi, as je, ji, *which is as in Engliſh* ſhe, ſhi.

G Before e or i is ſounded as the Latine *Gero*: Italian, *Giorno*: French, *Giſant*: Engliſh, Geffrey, Giles: or more like the Spaniſh, called j iota, or j conſonant, which is pronounced as ſh in Engliſh: ſo they ſay Gémir, to groane, pronouncing as it were written in Engliſh ſhemir, Gingíbre, ginger, ſhinſhibre.

G and j conſonant written one for another.

For the Spaniard maketh no difference in ſpeaking of this G before e and i, from the j conſonant, and they write one for another, as Agéno, Linage, Menſage, Liſongéro, Mageſtád, or Ajéno, Linaje, Menſaje, Liſonjéro, Majeſtád.

G Before n in the middle of a word loſt, as Ignomínia, Inomínia, ignominie, Ignorância, Inorância, ignozance.

H This letter is neither vowell nor conſonant, but a note of aſpiration, it is called in the Spaniſh as in the Engliſh Ache, which were more properly in my opinion to be called as ſome

ſome nations doe, Ha, becauſe it doth ſo import in pronouncing as in Engliſh, Harnes, Harnes, Hate, Hang.

This H in the beginning of a word is pronounced in Spaniſh with more vehemencie and emphaſis, and in the middle or end of a word weakely and faintly. *H in beginning of a word.*

In the beginning he muſt be pronounced with more force, or elſe there would be no difference found in ſpeaking theſe words, and their like, Háca, a nagge: Acá hither: as Ven acá, come hither, Háſta, vntill, and Aſta for a ſpeare: Háya, a beech tree: A'ya, a murſe: Húſo, a ſpindle: U'ſo, vſe.

In the middle of a word not ſo forcible, as Ahechár, pronounce as Aechár, Alholí, Aloli, a barne or garner. *H in middle of a word.*

This H goeth before all the fiue vowels, as Hazér, to make or doe: Hécho, made or done: Higado, the liuer: Hollin, the ſoot of a chimney: Húſo, a ſpindle. But it may not in true Spaniſh orthographie be written before a conſonant, as Criſto, not Chriſto.

Beſides it is loſt after T, as Ortografia, not Orthografia, Teólogo, not Theólogo. *H taken away.*

With P alſo it is loſt, and the P turned into F, as Filóſofo, not Philóſopho, which they muſt obſerue that would write the Spaniſh tongue aright in all that are like theſe.

Where Ue followeth H, it is pronounced as W, Huérto, an orchard: Huéſſo, a bone: pronounce Wuerto, Wueſſo: or as if G went before thus, Gwerto, Gweſſo, which I take to be more fit for the Engliſhmans pronunciation for theſe and the like words. Hue *pronounced as* Wue.

That word which beginneth with H, ſhall not haue H in the middle, except C goe before it, as in Hecho, made, Hechizár, to bewitch, and the like.

I There be three kindes of I in the Spaniſh, that is, ſmall i, Greeke y, and j Iota, or conſonant. Theſe two i, y, with a verie ſmall ſlender ſound, as the French and Italians doe, which is as the double ee in Engliſh, wee, ſhee, fee, decree, ſo in Spaniſh, Tiráno, a tirant, Teerano: Vida, life, Veeda, & not as Engliſhmen pronounce Teyráno, veida, which al other nations miſlike in hearing them ſpeaking Latine, ſaying, Propino tibi, they pronounce Propeino tibi, which I would wiſh they would but marke, and take notice thereof: for the French, Italian, and Spaniard, doe learne and are taught by their Schoolemaſters to pronounce the Latine different from their owne tongue, otherwiſe one nation ſhould not vnderſtand another ſpeaking the Latine. But in this tongue as in the Italian and French, they muſt obſerue, except they will fall into the vice of *Iotaciſmus*, and be laughed at, and not be vnderſtood by ſtrangers when they ſpeake or reade. I *three kinds.* *A note for Engliſhmen.*

This ſmall i is vſed in a word as a vowell by it ſelfe, as Tinta, pincke, and in a diphthong, as Niéto, a nephew. *Small* i.

Y is put in the beginning of a word before a vowell or conſonant, as yo, ya, yr, and in the end as Daréys, Podéys. Y.

J iota or j conſonant, which this tongue taketh of the Arabique, is pronounced as in French, *Jamais, Deja, Jehan*, in Engliſh like h, as Jardin, a gardin, ſhardin, Járro, a pot, ſharro, ójo, an eie, Ojho, Hoja, a leafe, Hoſha: Ovéja, a ſheepe, Oueſha: Abéja, a bee, Abeſha: In Seuill and thereabout, they pronounce it not ſo much in the teeth, but more in the throat, as Cſhardin, Cſharro, Ozho, Hozha, Ovezha, Abezha. *J pronounced like* ſh.

Some authors in the Spaniſh write theſe words (yet ill) and the like, with H. Hieruſalem, Hierónimo, which ſhould be thus, Jeruſalem, Ierónimo.

K The Spaniard neuer vſeth this letter but when it is required of the Greeke and proper names then ſounded as in the Engliſh, as Kalendas.

L, M, N, O, P. Are all pronounced as in the Latine, French, Italian, and iuſt as in Engliſh: But P may not be doubled in Spaniſh, as Aprovar, to approue, Apetíto, appetite, and not Approvár, Appetito. P before T in the middle of a word loſt, as Captívo, pronounce Cautivo. P *not doubled.* P *caſt away.*

Neither can L be doubled in Spaniſh when the word commeth of the Latine, and keepeth the Latine ſound, as Ilúſtre, in Latine *Illuſtris*: Sílaba, in Latine *Syllaba*: Colégio, *Collegium*. So likewiſe of N, as Tiráno, not Tiránno, in Latine *Tyrannus*, but when theſe keepe not the ſound of the Latine, looke hereafter in double Ll, ñ, and there you ſhall finde how they are pronounced. *When* L *not doubled.* *When* N *not doubled.* *Nota.*

Q hath two pronunciations, not of his owne nature, but by reaſon of a vowell following him.

If ua follow, as in Latine and Engliſh, Quantitie, Quarter, ſo in Spaniſh Quándo, when, Quartána, Quál.

But when ue or ui follow, it is to be pronounced as the Italian, *Che, Chi*, or the French *Que, Qui*, as Engliſh Ke, Ki, as Queſtión, a Queſtion or quarrell, Keſtion, Quiéto, quiet, Kieto, except when the word is Latine, as Delinquente, Eloquente. Que, Qui, *pronounced as* Ke, Ki.

R With

R With the Gręekes and Latines termed *Litera canina*, ſo the Spaniard calleth him Letra perrina, the doggiſh letter, becauſe dogs in grinning their teeth, when they would bite, ſound this letter R. It is pronounced as the Latine, Italian and French, but if it be in the beginning of a word it is ſounded ſtrongly, as the Grecians doe ſound. The Spaniard ſaith Ráyo, a ſun beame, Réy, a king, or if it be doubled in the middeſt of a word, you cannot ſound with two great vehemencie, as Bárro, Clay, Cárro, a Cart. But if it be in the middeſt of a word and ſingle, with a gentle and milde pronunciation, as ára, an altar, Móro, a blacke Moore.

S made like a ſnake doubled with his head lifted vp.

S With x. z. and ç. are pronounced (although the one more plaine and ſounding, and the reſt leſſe) by putting the tongue to the roofe of the mouth, and then hiſſing out the voyce with the lips open as a ſnake, and therefore the Gręekes called this letter S by that hiſſing name, as alſo made it in faſhion double as a ſnake, with his head lifted vp, accordingly is it made in Latine, Italian, and Spaniſh. In Spaniſh theſe letters are called Culebrinas, which is ſnakie, of Culébra, a ſnake, which vſeth hiſſing.

This S in the beginning of a word as in Latine, Italian, and French, and as in Engliſh Sand, Death, Sin, God, Sudden, ſo in Spaniſh Sabér, Sembrár, Sóbra, Sudór.

But if S be ſingle in the middeſt of a word betweene two vowels, then with a gentle ſound almoſt like Z, as the French doe, adding thereby great grace to their tongue, as *Egliſe* a Church, *Cauſe*, ſo in Spaniſh, Cauſa, Roſa, úſo, púſo. But if it be doubled, then ſtrongly, as in Engliſh Croſſed, toſſed, ſo in Spaniſh Fuéſſemos, gruéſſo.

Nota, S *neuer in beginning of a word except a vowell follow.*

In the end of a word as Z, as Cártas, Letters, Cámaras, Chambers, or going to ſtoole. And note that this letter cannot be in the beginning of a word when a conſonant next followeth. Therefore you muſt write Eſpéro, I hope, and not Spéro. Eſcrivo, I write, and not Scrivo.

Ti neuer turned in Ci in Spaniſh, as in other tongues.

T Is pronounced as in the Latine, Italian, French and Engliſh, except it can neuer ſound *ci*, as the Latines, Italians, French and Engliſh doe when after *t* followeth *i* with a vowell, as in Latine *Prudentia*, Italian, *Amicitia*, French *Iuſtification*, Engliſh Ambition, in Spaniſh it muſt be written Prudéncia, Amicícia, Juſtificación, Ambición, otherwiſe the writing were falſe, and you ſhould pronounce Ti as in *Tibi*.

Alſo if H follow T, as Theólogo, Theopómpo, write and pronounce Teólogo, Teopómpo.

U pronounced broad as ou.

U Being a vowell not to be pronounced with a ſmall ſound as Engliſh, Stue, Vzue, Crue, Iſſue, but as the French doth in his diphthong *ou*, almoſt as the Engliſh ou, as *Tu*, ton, Buche, the maw, *Bouche*. But being a conſonant is pronounced as in other languages in the beginning of a word, as Váca, a Cow, Véna, a Veine, Víno, Wine, Vóto, a Vow, Vúlgo, the common people, in the middeſt of a word as Aváro, Gávia, úva. Alſo when two uu come together, and a vowell following, the ſecond is a conſonant, as úvo, Túve, except Vueſtro.

X pronounced as ſh.
X and j written often in Spaniſh one for another.

X Is one of the Culebrínas létras, the ſnakie or hiſſing letters, as aboue ſaid in the letter S, and is pronounced like J conſonant, and the Spaniard often writeth one for another, as Xaráue, ſirrup, Jaráue, and is pronounced as the French *ch*, as the Engliſh ſh, as Faxa, a waſtband, Brúxa, a hag, Flóxo, weake, Fatha, Bruſha, Floſho.

Y Is aboue in I.

Z Is called in Spaniſh Zéta, as the Hebrew Zain, from whence it is drawne, and from the Hebrew tongue, and is pronounced as the Engliſh Z, as Zángano, a droane, Zélo, zeale, Zodíaco, the Zodiacke, ſo likewiſe in the end of a word, as Bóz, a voice, Crúz, a Croſſe.

Ch as in Engliſh Ch.

Ch Before any of the fiue vowels to be pronounced as in Engliſh, Chapman, Chiefely, Chicken, Chop, Chooſe: ſo in Spaniſh, Chamelóte, Chamlet: Chiminéa, a Chimney: Chórro, a dzoake: Chúſma, a company of people of the common ſort.

Ll pronounced as Li.

Ll As gl in Italian, as *Cavagli*, *Moglie*, *Figli*, as double Ll in French, as *Fille*, *Coquille*, as Li in Engliſh, as Lláno, plaine: Lléno, full: Llovér, to raine: Llúvia, raine: pronounce Liáno, Liéno, Liovér, Liuvia: ſo likewiſe in the middle of a word, as Querrellóſo, Kerrelioſo, quarrelſome: in the end of a word neuer in Spaniſh written double, as Mil, a thouſand, not Mil.

ñ pronounced as ni.

ñ As the Italian and French gn, *Montagna*, *Campagna*, French *Compaignon*, *Mignon*, in Engliſh as ni: as Montáño, a mountaine, *Montania*, Campáña, *Campania*, ſo Dáño, loſſe, *Dannyo*, Báño, a bath, *Bannyo*.

Of

Of Orthographie in Diphthongs.

A Diphthong (according to the definition of Grammarians) is a sounding together of two different vowels, as if they were but one onely, as in English, Ayde, Auditor. *Definition of Diphthongs.*

In Spanish there are twelue sorts.

The first in ai, or ay, as gaita, andáys, cantáis. But when two vowels come together and make more then one sound, they should be marked ouer head with two pricks, to take away confusion, as Caída, pronounced Caída, and so the rest. 1. Ai, ay.

The second in ao, where a is more sounded then o, as Quartáo, a nag, Saráo, a hall to dance in, Vilbáo, a proper name of a towne, are pronounced in the same sort, as Cats maule. 2. Ao.

The third in au, where a soundes more then u, as Cánsa, Autór, Caudíllo: except Laúd, a lute, Ataúd, a tombe: La-úd, Ata-úd. 3. Au.

The fourth in ei and ey, where e is more sounded then i, as Réy, a king, Léy, a law: when they are seuered, write them with two pricks thus, Leístes, Reïr. 4. Ei, ey.

The fift in eu, where e is most perceiued, as Féudo, Dêudo, Réuma: being disioyned write thus: Reümár, Reüngír. 5. Eu.

The first in ia, in which a is more heard sound then i, as Saia, Vaia, Malícia, Presência: except Mia, Dia, Porfía, Desvía. 6. Ia.

The seuenth ie, ye, where e is most heard pronounced, as Viénto, Sciénto, Viéne, Bién, Quién, Quiéra, Arriéndo, Dispiérto, Apriéto, Pie, Piédra, Tiérra, Ciélo, Infierno, Diéz, Siéte, Miél, Hiél. 7. Ie, ye.

The eight in io, or yo, where o is most sounded, as Yo, Dió, Vió: except Mío, Río, Frío, Tío. 8. Io, yo.

The ninth in iu, where i is more heard then the u, as Ciudád, a citie. 9. Iu.

The tenth in oi, or oy, as Soy, Doy, Voy, Oygo: except Oy'do, Roy'do. 10. Oi, oy.

The eleuenth in ue, where e is more sounded then u, as Fuérça, Muérte, Fuérte, Cuerno, Nuevo. Fuégo, Huélgo, Nuéz, Vihuéla. 11. Ue.

The twelft in ui, and uy, where u is more sounded then the i, as Muy, Fuy, Cuidádo, Húyo. 12. Ui, uy.

Foure Rules following shewing how euery vowell maketh a seuerall syllable by himselfe, or is sounded in diphthong with another.

The first Rule.

If betweene two vowels come h, or a consonant, such vowels cannot ioyne themselues together to make a syllable or diphthong, as Ahinco, Bolár, except Auré, Aurás, Aurá, Aurémos, Auréys, where u r and the vowell make a syllable, the like in Auría, Auríamos. *The first Rule.*

The second Rule.

Iny two vowels comming together, neither of them being i nor u, make two syllables, as Neémias, Posséer, Roér, except these Hebrew words which end in two ee, as Oseé, Bethleem, Bersabeé. *The second Rule.*

The third Rule.

When the first person of a verbe doth end in two vowels, and the first vowell being i, and the accent stand vpon the same i, then that i maketh a syllable of it selfe without ioyning it selfe with the vowell following, as Embío, Embías, Embía, Embiámos. Porfío, Porfías, Porfían, Espío, Espías, Espían. Confío, Confías, Confía. *The third Rule.*

The fourth Rule.

But if the word doth end in two vowels, and the first of them being i, and the accent not on the first, then they make both the vowels a diphthong into a syllable, as Grácia, Justícia, Daniél, Ezechiél, Gabriél, Senténcia, Victória, and in like sort doe they when they haue the accent on the last of them, as Passión, Religión, Nación, Caución, Ración, because they come of words of the Latine that haue their accent in the *Antepenultima*, therefore must the Spanish haue it in the *Vltima*. Except these words in Spanish, Anciáno, Diocleciáno, Diáblo. *The fourth Rule.*

Of Triphthongs.

A Triphthong is a sounding of three vowels into one syllable with one breath together, and that after fiue sorts. *Definition of a Triphthong.*

The first in iai, or yay, as Vayáys, Espaciáys, where a is heard more then i. 1. iay, yay.

The second iey or yey, where e is more sounded then i, as Ensuziéys. 2. iey, yey.

The third in iue or yue, where e is heard more then u, as Hoyuélo, Arroyuélo. 3. iue, yue.

The fourth in uai or uay, as Guáy. 4. uai, uay.

The fift in uei or uey, as Buéy, Buéytre. 5. uei, uey.

Of Prosodia or Accents, the second part of this Grammar.

AS Orthographie handleth letters, so Prosodie treateth of syllables, and the right sounding and pronouncing the same with their true accents, which is to make the syllable or word long or short, soft or sharpe, without the which the learner cannot tell how to read or pronounce the tongue, much lesse to be vnderstood when he speaketh the same, whereby he shall be not onely disgraced but be driuen to bestow longer time in forgetting that ill touch taken vp, then he might be in going forward in learning fiue times so much. The which being carefully loked vnto at the first, cannot but much adorn the speaker, make himselfe vnderstood, as also giue himselfe exceeding comfort in going forward, when he knoweth he singeth true harmony, which cannot but delight those that will listen thereto.

Description of Prosodia.

Prosodia, is a rule or knowledge, shewing with what accent euery syllable of a word is to be pronounced, as Cárcel, not Carcél, a prison.

Spanish not subiect to Latine accents.

Many haue affirmed the Spanish tongue to be subiect to the Latine accents, seeing it is for the most part deriued from the same, but common speech and vse shew the contrary in many words, as Latine *Génesis*, in Spanish Genesis, *Sódoma*, in Spanish Sodóma, *Hélena*, Heléna, so in Latine *ámor*, in Spanish amór, *autor*, autór, *Cérasus*, Cerézo. But yet note this, that words deriued of the Latine doe keepe the accent of the Latine, except some proper names or words ending in d, l, n, or r, as *Abstinéntia*, Abstinéncia, *Obediéntia*, Obediéncia, Benefício, Blándo, Cadúco, Ceremónia, Culpa, Dígno, Dóte, Familia, Fecóndo, Furióso, Prémio.

Of the Latine, the Latine accent.

But if they end in d, l, n, or r, then they haue alwaies the accent in the last syllable, as Amistád, Pestilenciál, Camelón, Pastór.

Words ending in D, L, N, or R, accented in the last syllable.

Except some few ending in l, n, and r, ángel, ábil, apóstol, árbol, jóven, lóor, ánsar, ámbar, acíbar, açúcar, açófar, alcáçar, nácar, tíbar, cármen, cáncer, carácter, cárcel, Cristóval, cónsul, crímen, débil, deficil, móbil, Immóbil, fócil, dócil, Estéril, estiércol, Fácil, Dátil, Frágil, v'til, inv'til, fértil, inábil, nástil, márgen, mártir, mármol, Trébol, órden, orígen, vírgen, exámen, volúmen, imágen, betúmen, Estévan, and verie few or none besides these, for that in setting these downe I ran ouer (as neere as I could) euery word in the whole Dictionarie, whereby you may coniecture, what paines, trouble, and time, such bookes of such method as this haue bestowed on them, before they can come forth to shew to the learner in a moment, that which the composer can hardly find out in a moneth: but if any other there be, I haue accented them in their places, as all the words generally in the whole Dictionarie whatsoeuer, to make the beginner, and also the well read to be perfect in the pronunciation, without which he shall be derided, as not vnderstood when he readeth or speaketh.

Except these.

All Nounes in ion, and in or, accent in the last syllable, as Occasión, Predicadór, so also in i, s, z, as Alcauci, Cortés, Pertináz, Cerviz, except Adives, a beast in Barbarie like a Foxe, which barketh and cryeth in the night as loud as a Foxe.

Nota.

Opus laboris.

2 Accents in one word.

Although in the Latine there is in no word but one accent dominant, yet in the Spanish often are two found, as Ciertaménte, Fuértaménte, wherefore I will set downe the order of the Spanish accenting, first giuing example of those words which continually are accented, then of those which are somtimes, and somtimes not; last of all, those which haue two or three accents.

These words alwayes accented, as

Hé há
y'd y'r
aquí acá
séd sóy
cál bóz
grán áy
Augustín acullá.

These words following sometime accented, sometime not, as

Al, If it be an article, it is not accented, as Dezíd al Señór ésto, Tell your master this. But if it be not an article, it is then accented, as Pensád en ál, Thinke on some thing.

Aun, When que followeth it is not accented, as Pédro aunque sépa morír no hará, Peter although he knew he should die, he would not doe it. But asking a question it is then accented, as Aún duérmes Pédro? Doe you sleepe yet Peter?

Ante, Being a Prepositiõ is not accented, as Ante Dios estámos, we stand before God. But being an Aduerbe it is accented, as Anté víno Pédro que Juán, Peter came before Iohn.

Cerca,

Cerca, a Prepoſition, not accented, as Cerca tódos dád buén exémplo, Aboue all giue good example. But if it be a Verbe, Aduerbe, or Noune, or this particle De going before or following, then it is accented, as El Rey cérca con ſu génte, que tiéne, cerca de ſi, la ciúdad y la rodéa, cérca tóda, y tiéne la cérca de piédra, y de cérca paréce fuérte. The king doth beſiege with his people, which he hath about him, the citie, and compaſſeth it all about, neere vnto it, which hath his wall of ſtone, and neere hand it ſeemeth ſtrong. *Note.*

De mi, A poſſeſſiue not accented, as De mi pádre heredé virtúd, Of my father I inherited vertue. But if it be not a poſſeſſiue it is accented, as De mí hablás ſegun véo, You ſpeake of me as I perceiue.

Del, The article not accented, as Del virtuóſo es la virtúd amáda, Vertue is beloued of the honeſt. But if it be a Pronoune it is accented, as Dios és buéno y dél nos viéne el bién, God is good, and from him commeth goodnes.

Do, Spoken indefinitely not accented, as Do eſtuviére el buéno eſtaré yo, where the good man ſhall be, there will I be alſo. But ſpoken in aſking a queſtion it is accented, as Dó eſtá Juán? where is John?

El, Being an Article not accented, as El buéno témе a Dios, The iuſt feareth God. If it be a Pronoune then accented, as Criſto nos áma y élnos redimió, Chriſt loueth vs, and he it is that hath redeemed vs.

Entre, A Prepoſition not accented, as Entre los ſántos deſséo eſtár, I deſire to be among the godly. But being a Verbe is accented, as Entré Pédro y no Juán, Let Peter enter and not John.

Mas, The Coniunction not accented, as No hagáis mal, mas hazéd bien, Doe not euill but doe good. But being an Aduerbe, then it is, as Más quiéro bíve, &c. y és más querido, He liueth more at quiet, &c. and is better beloued,

Medio, In compoſition not accented, as Medio en burlas, médio en véras, Halfe in ieſt, halfe in earneſt. If alone, then otherwiſe, as Tenéd el médio en coſas, Keepe a meane in matters.

Nos, Not accented, as Hábla nos Jeſus, Chriſt telleth vs. But if it be a nommatiue caſe to the verbe, then it is, as Nós querémos, We will, &c.

Vn, Not accented, as Vn hómbre, A man. But if y the Coniunction goe before, then it is, as Dí le pán, y ún reál, I gaue him bread and ſixpence.

These words following not accented, as

Alo, Alos, Aunque, Con, De, Dela, Delo, Delas, Delos, De mis, Deſde, Deſque, Don, Doña, E, En, En mis, Enlo, Enlos, Enla, Enlas, Fray, Y, Lo, Le, Me, Micer, Moſſen, as Micer ſancho, y Moſſen Pedro viénen, Maiſter Sanches and Maiſter Peter comes. Ni, Os, Pero, Pues, Por, Quan, Quel, San, Si, Su, So, Tan, Tal. Alſo all the Articles while they keepe the nature of Articles, which are theſe,

A, al, ala, alo, alas, alos,
Del, dela, delo, delos, delas,
El, la, las, Lo, los, le, les.

Words of two Accents.

Words of two Accents.

A'ltaménte, Hártobáſta, Buénaménte, Biénditaménte, Ciértaménte, Bienaventuradaménte, Diéſtraménte, Gráveménte, Graſióſaménte, Yguálmente, Iúntaménte, Luéngaménte, Magnificaménte, Razonáblemente, Ráraménte, Sábiaménte.

Words of three Accents.

Words of three Accents.

Múymálaménte, Múybuénaménte.

Of Etymologie and the Noune.

Definition of Etymologie.

Tymologie, is a Rule of shewing and searching out the Originall of wordes, with that pertaineth to them.

This searching out of originall and descendence of wordes is considered in diuers manners: but among the rest, for the beginners in any language whatsoeuer, this is so necessarie, that without it, they could not vnderstand or learne it: the which by the Latine Grammarians hath beene, and is called Declension and Coniugation (which is likewise a declination) but that the former is of the Nounes, and the other of the Verbes.

The Spanish hath eight parts of Speech, as the Latine.

Noune, Pronoune, Verbe, Participle, } declined. Aduerbe, Coniunction, Prepositon, Interiection, } vndeclined.

Of the Noune.

Primitiue. Deriuatiue.

Nounes be diuided into Substantiues and Adiectiues, which are likewise diuided into Primitiues, Deriuatiues.

The Primitiue, which is not deriued of any other, but is *Primum*, of himself, as Abéja, a Bee.

The Deriuatiue, is drawne from the Primitiue, as Abejonázo, a great Bee.

And of like nature to these Primitiue nounes, are these Interrogatiues, Redditiues, and Numerals following.

Interrogatiue.

To the Primitiue, these following, and the like are subiect, as

The Interrogatiue, as Quién? whoe? Quál? what manner? Quánto? how much? Quántos? how many?

The Relatiue which answereth to the Interrogatiue, as tal, such a one, Tantos, so many.

Numerall.

The Numerall to which these kinds following doe belong, as

Cardinall.

Cardinall, from which as from a fountaine the rest doe spring, these doe I wish the learner to haue by heart.

Cardinall Numerals.

1	vno	21	veinte úno	1500	mil y quiniéntos
2	dos	22	veynte dos, &c.	2000	dos mil
3	tres	30	tréynta	3000	tres mil
4	quátro	40	quarénta	4000	quátro mil
5	cínco	50	cinquénta	5000	cínco mil
6	seys	60	sesénta	6000	séys mil
7	siéte	70	seténta	7000	siéte mil
8	ócho	80	ochénta	8000	ócho mil
9	nuéve	90	novénta	9000	nuéve mil
10	diéz	100	cién, or ciénto	10000	diéz mil
11	ónze	101	ciénto y vno	100000	cién mil
12	dóze	200	dociéntos y doziéntos	1000000	millón
13	trèze	300	treziéntos	2000000	dos millónes
14	catórze	400	quatrociéntos	3000000	tres millones.
15	quínze	500	quiniéntos		
16	diés y séys	600	seyscientos		
17	diéz y siéte	700	siéteciéntos		
18	diéz y ócho	800	ochociéntos		
19	diés y nuéue	900	nuéve ciéntos		
20	véynte	1000	mil		

Ordinall Numerals.

The ordinals, which declare the order of a place or time, as Primèro, segúndo, tercéro, quárto, quínto, séxto, séptimo, or seténo, octávo, nóno, or novéno, décimo, or dezéno, onzéno, dozéno, trezéno, catorzéno, quinzéno, décimo séxto, décimo séptimo, décimo octáve, décimo nóno, veinténo, veinténo úno, veinténo dos, &c. Treinténo, quarenténo, cinquenténo, sesenténo, setenténo, ochenténo, noventéno, centésimo, or cienténo, dosienténos, trezentènos, quatrocientènos, quinienténos, seyscienténos, sietecienténos, ochocienténos, nuevecienténos, miléssimo.

Partatiues

Partatiues which ſignifie many ſeuerally, as Cádo vno, euery one, Entrámbos, both of them, ni vno, ni ótro, neither of them, or one among many, as ótro, another, algúno ſome body. *Partatiue numerals.*

Vniuerſalls, as tódos, all: ninguno, no body. *Vniuerſall numerals.*

Particulars, as Algúno, ſome body. *Particular numera's.*

Aduerbials, ioyning the Cardinall Numerals with this Aduerbe vez, as vna vez, once: dos vézes, twiſe: tres vezes, thriſe: diez vézes, ten times: cien vezes, a hundzed times: mil vézes, a thouſand times. *Aduerbiall numerals.*

Deriuatiues.

Deriuatiues, which haue contained vnder them theſe following, viz. *Deriuatiues.*

Of countries or townes, as Aragonéz, a man of Aragon: Andaluz, a man of Andaluzía: Granadino, a man of the citie or country of Granada: Gaditáno, a man of Cadis or Caliz. *Of countries or townes.*

Of the nation, as Dalmácios, people of Dalmatia: Ingléſes, Engliſhmen, or people of England: Eſcoſſéſes, Scottiſhmen: Francéces, Frenchmen: Móros, blacke Moores: Túrcos, Turkes. *Of the nation.*

Words in oſo are deriuatiues of their Primitiues, as Mentiroſo, lying, of Mentira, a lie: Clamoróſo, clamorous, of Clamór, clamor, glorióſo, &c. *Deriuatiues from Primitiues.*

Of ſignifying exceſſe in údo, and ázo, as Barudúdo hauing a great long beard, of Barba, jarrázo, a great blow with a cup, of jarro a cup: Papúdo, hauing a great wide throat, of Papo a throat: Rodillázo, a great blow with the knee, of Rodilla a knee. *Exceſſiues in údo, and ázo.*

Diminutiues in ico, ito, eta, uela, illa, illo, as Bonico, Bonito, pretty, good: vaquéta, vaquilla, a little cow or heifer, of Váca a cow: Ropilla a little gowne or caſſocke, of Ropa: Caldereta, a little kettle, of Calderón a kettle: Cardenillo, ſomwhat black and blew, of Cardéno blacke and blew. *Diminutiues.*

Of Numbers.

To Nounes as well Subſtantiues as Adiectiues, there are theſe affections following belonging, Number, Caſe, Gender.

The Number ſheweth the quantity, the Caſe the qualitie, and the Gender the ſex.

There are two Numbers. The Singular and the Plurall. *Numbers.*

The Singular ſpeaking of one, as Libro, a booke.

The Plurall of moe, as Libros, bookes.

This is a generall Rule, if the ſingular number doe end in a vowell, the plurall number is made by putting to s, as Palábra, palábras, Cuérpo, cuérpos, Muérte, muértes, Javali, javalis. *Nota.*

Except ſome few, which muſt haue es added to them, as Rey, réyes, Léy, léyes, Fe, fées, Buéy, buéyes, ſo in this manner all nounes ending in conſonants muſt haue es added to them, as Mercéd, mercédes, Ciudád, ciudádes, Mortál, mortáles, Paſtór, paſtóres, &c.

Of Caſes.

The Spaniſh hath Caſes as the Latine, but all in one ending or termination. and are declined with an article, as the Nominatiue with el la, the Genitiue with the Prepoſition De, as the Italian and French, the Datiue Para, the Accuſatiue a, the Ablatiue as the Genitiue, de. *Caſes.*

Of Genders.

There are three, { The Maſculine, as El Pádre, the father. / The Feminine, as La Mádre, the mother. / The Neuter, which is of ſmall vſe with the Spaniard, as Lo ſincéro, Lo malo, for they ſpeake by the Subſtantiue, as La Sinceridád, El mal. } *Genders.*

To know the Genders, obſerue well theſe Rules following. *Rules to know the gender of moſt part of Nounes.*

All nounes ending in l, o, or r, are commonly of the Maſculine gender, as Cardinál, a Cardinall, Cárdo, a Thiſtle, Paſtór, a Shepherd. Except la Cárcel, a priſon, la Piél, the ſkin, la Canál, a Gutter, la Equinoctiál, the Equinoctiall, la Naual, a battell at ſea, la Hiél, gall, la Sál, Salt, la Máno, a hand. *Nota. Nounes in l, o, r, Maſculine. Exception.*

All Nounes for the moſt part in a, d, or ion, are of the Feminine gender, as Mantéca, Butter, Mageſtád, Maieſty, Deliberación, Deliberation. *Nounes in a, d, ion, feminine.*

Names of trees commonly the Maſculine gender, and the fruits the feminine, as

El Perál, a Peare tree.	La Péra, the Peare.
El Ciruélo, a Plum tree.	La Ciruéla, the Plum.
El Narránjo, an Orange tree.	La Narránja, the Orange.
El Cidro, the Citron tree.	La Cidra, the Citron fruit.
El Mançáno, the Apple tree.	La Mançána, the Apple.
El Camuéſo, the Pippen tree.	La Camuéſa, the Pippen.
El Cerézo, the Cherrie tree.	La Ceréza, the Cherrie.
El Alméndro, the Almond tree.	La Alméndra, the Almond.
El Avellano, the Hazell nut tree.	La Avellána, the Hazell nut.
El Caſtáño, the Cheſtnut tree.	La Caſtáña, the Cheſtnut.
El Nogál, the Walnut tree.	La Nuez, the Wall nut.
El Azeytúno, the Oliue tree.	La Azeytúna, the Oliue.
El Olivo, idem.	La Oliva, idem.
El Morál, the Mulbery tree.	La Móra, the Mulbery fruit.
El Granádo, the Pomgranat tree.	La Granáda, the Pomgranate.

Exception. Except theſe whoſe tree and fruit are both Maſculine, as

El Menbrillo, the Quince tree and Quince fruit.
El Limon, the Limon tree and fruit.
El Alvérchigo, the Apricocke tree and fruit.
El Avercóque, idem.
El Pero, the tree and fruit of a kinde of Apple, very raw and cold by nature, good to roſt, red on one ſide.

Another exception. Except theſe alſo whoſe fruit is the Maſculine & tree the Feminine, as

El Higo, the Fig. La Higuéra, the Fig tree.
El Dátil, the Date. La Pálma, the Date tree or Palme tree.
El Razimo, the bunch of grapes. La Parra, the Vine, or La vid.

Verbals in or *make themſelues feminin by putting to a.*

Verbals in or are of the maſculine gender, and make themſelues feminine, by putting to a, as Habladór, a prater, Habladóra, a ſhe prater.

Likewiſe Nounes in o, make their feminine, by changing o into a, as Honrádo, honoured; Honráda: Suégro, a father in law, Suégra, a mother in law.

Of Declenſions and of the Article.

Declenſion of the Article.

The Spaniſh (as likewiſe the Italian and French) haue but one manner of Declenſion or declining, that is with the Article, which in Spaniſh is thus declined:

Article maſculine Sing.: Nom. el. Gen. del, de lo. Dat. Para el, Para lo. Acc. a el, al, alo. Ab. del, delo. — Plu.: Nom. los. Gen. de los. Dat. para los. Acc. alos. Ab. delos.

The Feminine Article thus.

Article feminine Sing.: Nom. la. Gen. de la. Dat. para la. Acc. al, ala. Ab. de la. — Plu.: Nom. las. Gen. de las. Dat. para las. Accuſ. a las. Ab. de las.

In the Spaniſh (as Italian and French) the Article Maſculine is put oftentimes in ſtead of the Feminine, when the word beginneth with a vowell, as el agua, the water, el alma, the ſoule: to make the pronunciation more ſweet *Euphoniæ gratia*, and it may alſo be put la agua, la alma.

Nota. Alſo in the Spaniſh (as Italian and French) the Article is neuer ſeparated from Nownes Appellatiues, neither in Singular nor Plurall number: as Spaniſh, el libro, los libros, la cámara, a chamber, las cámaras. But in Nownes proper it is not vſed ſo: for it were abſurd to ſay, el Franciſco, la Iuána: neither is it vſed with this word Dios, except there be ioyned with it ſome *Epitheton*, as el Dios todo poderóſo, God almightie.

Declining

Declining of a Noune.

All Nounes are thus declined, Sing. Nom. el maéſtro. Gen. del maéſtro. Dat. para el maéſtro. Acc. a el, oꝛ al maéſtro. Abl. del maéſtro. Plu. Nom. los maéſtros. Gen. de los maéſtros. Dat. para los maéſtros. Acc. a los maéſtros. Ab. de los maéſtros.

The feminine gender thus, Sing. Nom. la doctrína. Gen. de la doctrína. Dat. para la doctrína. Acc. a la doctrína. Ab. de la doctrína. Plu. Nom. las doctrínas. Gen. de las doctrínas. Dat. para las doctrínas. Acc. a las doctrínas. Abl. de las doctrínas.

Adiectiues are declined like the Subſtantiues both ſingular and plurall number.

Comparatiues and Superlatiues.

The Spaniſh to make compariſon, in the comparatiue degree vſeth this particle Mas, as Mas diligénte, more diligent, Mas vil, more vile: and to diminiſh, they vſe Ménos, as Ménos diligénte, leſſe diligent, Menos vil, leſſe vile. *Comparatiues.*

The Superlatiue.

The Superlatiue is made of this particle Muy, as Muy iuſto, very iuſt: ſometime with exaggerating and magnifying a matter, they forme their Superlatiues from nounes Adiectiues, as Iuſtiſſimo, Humaniſſimo, Hermoſiſſima, moſt excellent, moſt humane, moſt beautifull. *Superlatiues.*

These following thus compared:

Buéno, mejór, oꝛ mas buéno.
Malo, peór, muy málo.
Gránde, mayór, muy gránde, oꝛ Grandiſſimo.
Chico, menór, oꝛ mas chico, muy chico.
Mucho, mas, muy mucho, oꝛ muchiſſimo.
Poco, ménos, muy poco.

There be alſo Aduerbs of qualitie which are vſed with Comparatiue and Superlatiue, as nounes whereof they come, as Muy mas elegantaménte, much more eloquently, Muy mas diſcretaménte, much more diſcreetly. In like manner, Prepoſitions, as Detrás, behinde, mas Detrás, more behinde, muy Detrás, much behinde,: Debáxo, beneath oꝛ vnder, mas Debáxo, more below oꝛ vnder, muy Debáxo, much vnder oꝛ beneath.

A Pronoune.

The Spaniſh Pronoune is as the Latine like a Noune, and is vſed in rehearſing, of a proper name, of Pro and Nomen, i. foꝛ the name, and in ſpeech is vſed therefoꝛe.

Pronounes are diuided into { Primitiues and Deriuatiues.

The Primitiues are theſe, yo, tu, ſi, éſte, aquéſte, el, élſe, aquél, el qual, que, quien, miſmo, to which Miſmo all before going may be coupled, as yo miſmo, I my ſelfe: tu miſmo, thou thy ſelfe, ſi miſmo, himſelfe: el miſmo, he himſelfe, and ſo may you ſay yo miſma, tu miſma, &c. they are called Primitiues becauſe they are Primi, firſt, and not deriued of others. *Primitiues.*

Primitiues diuided into { Demonſtratiues. Relatiues.

They are called Demonſtratiues becauſe they ſhew a thing not ſpoken of before, as yo, tu, ſi, aquel, eſte, el. *Demonſtratiues.*

Relatiues as repeating oꝛ hauing relation to ſome thing ſpoken before, as el, eſte, que, quien, el qual. *Relatiues.*

Deriuatiues oꝛ Poſſeſſiues, becauſe they be deriued of the Primitiues and ſignifie poſſeſſion, as belonging to ſome thing, as mio, oꝛ mi: tuyo, oꝛ tu: ſuyo, oꝛ ſu, nuéſtro, vueſtro. *Deriuatiues.*

In Pronounes are chiefly to be noted, the Perſons, becauſe all Nounes and Participles

ples be of the third Perſon, but Pronounes of all three Perſons, as yo and his Plurall nos, be of the firſt Perſon, Tu and his Plurall vos, of the ſecond: and all the reſt whatſoeuer of the third Perſon, according to this rule. All Nounes, Pronounes and Participles, be of the third Perſon, except yo and tu.

The firſt perſon Yo, *thus declined.*

Yo *declined.*

Sing.	Nom. yo.	Plu.	Nom. nos, noſótros.	Fem Plu.	Noſótras.
	Gen. de mi.		Gen. de nos, de noſótros.		de noſótras.
	Dat. Para mi.		Dat. Para nos, para noſótros.		Para noſótras.
	Acc. a mi, a me.		Accuſ. a nos, a noſótros.		a noſótras.
	Ab. de mi.		Ab. de nos, de noſótros.		de noſótra.

Nota. This Pronoune in the ſingular number ſerueth as well for the Maſculine as Feminine gender, ſo in the Plurall doth Nos. But Noſótros only to the Maſculine, and Noſótras to the Feminine.

The Spaniard in ſpeech and writting vſeth this Pronoune Nos with the firſt perſon Plurall of the Imperatiue mood, by taking away s, from the Verbe, as Vámonos, for Vámos Nos, let vs goe: Leamónos, for Dexámos Nos, let vs leaue.

From this Pronoune Primitiue are two other deriued, one from the Singular number, as Mio from yo, another from the Plurall number, as Nueſtro from Noſótros.

Mi *and* Mio. Mio, Mia, in Latine *Meus, mea, meum,* in Italian *Mio, mia,* in French *Mon, ma.*

Example.

		Maſcul.	Fem.		Maſcul.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom. Mi, mio.	Mia.	Plu.	Nom. Mis, mios.	Mias.
	Gen. de mi, de mio.	de mia.		Gen. de mis, de mios.	de mias.
	Dat. Para mi, para mio,	para mia.		Dat. para mis, para mios.	para mias.
	Acc. a mi, a mio.	a mia.		Accu. a mis, a mios.	a mias.
	Ab. de mi, de mio.	de mia.		Ab. de mis, de mios.	de mias.

The learner in the Spaniſh muſt note, the manner how the Spaniard vſeth theſe Poſſeſſiues, Mi, mio, Tu, tuyo, Su, ſuyo: and when he ought to vſe them in ſpeech or writing, otherwiſe ſtraight he will bewray himſelfe in vſing vnproperly the tongue.

A rule when Mi, tu, ſu, *and* Mio, tuyo, ſuyo, *are to be vſed.* Mi, tu, ſu, are ſtill vſed, ioyned with another word, as Mi cavallo, my horſe, not Mio cavallo: Tu pienſamento, thy thought, not Tuyo pienſamento: Su provécho, his profit, not Suyo Provécho.

Nota. But when a queſtion is aſked, and Mio, Tuyo, Suyo, put abſolutely and not ioyned, as Cuya es eſſa eſpáda? whoſe rapier is this? Anſwer: Mia, tuya, ſuya, mine, thine, his: and not Mi, tu, ſu: De quien es eſte cuchillo? whoſe knife is this? Anſwer, Mio, tuyo, ſuyo: and not, Mi, tu, ſu. In like ſort when they make a relation of a thing ſpoken of before, and are placed at the end of a ſentence, clauſe or period, as éſte cavallo no es mio, mas de aquél que a mi lo dexó, paraque yo fuéſſe a vna caſa tuya: this horſe is not mine but his that left it me, that I ſhould ride to one of thy houſes, and you cannot ſay, éſte cavallo es mi, que yo fueſſe a vna caſa tu.

These and many ſuch like I wiſh the learner in the Spaniſh to mark diligently in authors as he reades.

S. added maketh Plurall number. To make the Plural number of Mi, Tu, Su adde to s, as Mis, Tus, Sus, and ſo of other words whatſoeuer, as before of nounes in the Noune.

This other deriued from the Plurall Noſótros is thus declined.

		Maſcul.	Fem.		Maſcul.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom.	Nuéſtro,	Nuéſtra.	Plu.	Nom.	Nuéſtros,	Nuéſtras.
	Gen. de	Nuéſtro, de	Nuéſtra.		Gen. de	Nuéſtros, de	Nuéſtras.
	Dat. para	Nuéſtro, para	Nuéſtra.		Dat. para	Nuéſtros, para	Nuéſtras.
	Accuſ. a	Nuéſtro, a	Nuéſtra.		Accuſ. a	Nuéſtros, a	Nuéſtras.
	Ablat. de	Nuéſtro, de	Nuéſtra.		Ablat. de	Nuéſtros, de	Nuéſtras.

The ſecond perſon Tu, *thus declined.*

Second perſon Tu.

			Maſcul.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom. Tu,	Plu.	Nom. Vos	Voſótros,	Voſótras.
	Gen. de Ti,		Gen. de Vos	de Voſótros,	de Voſótras.
	Dat. para Ti,		Dat. para Vos	para Voſótros,	para Voſótras.
	Acc. a Ti, a Te,		Accuſ. a Vos	a Voſótros,	a Voſótras.
	Abl. de Te.		Ablat. de Vos	de Voſótros,	de Voſótras.

Nota. Note that the Spaniard moſt ordinarily ioyneth to the Infinitiue mood of any verbe, this particle os, which is as much as vos, as Habláros, to ſpeake vnto you, Véros, to ſee you, Dezíros, to tell you.

Of

Of this Primitiue likewise come two Derivatiues, the one of the Singular number, as of Tu comes Tuyo, in Latine *Tuus, tua, tuum*, Italian, *Tuo, Tua*, French *Ton, Ta*. The other of the Plurall, Vos, or Voſótros, comes Vuéſtro.

Example.

	Maſcul.	Fem.		Maſcul.	Fem.
Sing. Nom.	Tu,	Túyo,	Túya.	Plu. Nom. Tus,	Túyos, Túyas.
Gen.	de Tu,	de Túyo,	Túya.	Gen. de Tus,	de Túyos, Túyas.
Dat.	para Tu,	para Túyo,	Túya.	Dat. para Tus,	para Túyos, Túyas.
Accuſ.	a Tu,	a Túyo,	Túya.	Accuſ. a Tus,	a Túyos, Túyas.
Abl.	de Tu,	de Túyo,	de Túya.	Abl. de Tus,	de Túyos, de Túyas.

But note how the Spaniard and Italian accounteth it a diſgrace to ſpeake to any man in the ſecond perſon ſingular either in the Nominatiue Tu, or in other caſes Ti or Te, except it be to his Meager, his ſlaue, his lackie, horſekeeper, or to ſome of baſe & vile account. To their ſeruants of the better reckoning, and to artificers and ſuch like perſons they ſpeake in the ſecond perſon Plurall, as Traéd aqui, bring hither, &c. Yréys a mi çapitéro, you ſhal goe to my ſhoomaker, Direys que me haga unos borzeguís, and you ſhall tell him that he make me a paire of buſkins. *Nota, how the Spaniard vſeth Tu, and the ſecond Plu.*

To all others they vſe the third perſon, as Quiere V.M. andár, Will your Maſterſhip goe? Ruéga a V. M. que me haga eſſa merced, &c. I intreat your Maſterſhip that you doe me this courteſie, &c. *Nota.*

And whereas Engliſhmen ſay, You, the French *Vous*, the Spaniard and the Italian ſpeaketh in the third perſon ſingular, as V.M.V.S. your Maſterſhip or Worſhip. *Nota.*

The other Derivatiue of the plurall number is this, Vuéſtro, of Vos or Voſótros, in Latine *Veſter, Veſtra, Veſtrum*, in Italian *Voſtro, Voſtra*, French *Voſtre*, in Engliſh yours. *Nota.*

Example. Vuéſtro.

Sing. Nom.	Vuéſtro,	Vuéſtra.	Plurall. Nom.	Vuéſtros,	Vuéſtras.
Gen.	de Vuéſtro,	Vuéſtra.	Gen.	de Vuéſtros,	Vuéſtras.
Dat.	para Vuéſtro,	Vuéſtra.	Dat.	para Vuéſtros,	Vuéſtras.
Accuſ.	a Vuéſtro,	Vuéſtra.	Accuſ.	a Vuéſtros,	Vuéſtras.
Ablat.	de Vuéſtro,	Vuéſtra.	Ablat.	de Vuéſtros,	Vuéſtras.

The third perſon Si, *thus declined.* Si.

Sing. and Plurall. Nom. caret. Gen. de ſi. Dat. para ſi. Accuſ. a ſi. Abl. de ſi.

Of this Primitiue one Derivatiue, which ſignifieth in Latine *Suus, Sua, Suum*: Italian, *Suo, Sua*, French, Sien, ſienne: Engliſh, his, as.

Example. Su, Súyo.

	Maſcul.	Fem.		Maſcul.	Fem.
Sing. Nom.	ſu,	Súyo,	Súya.	Plu. Nom. ſus,	Súyos, Súyas.
Gen.	de ſu,	Súyo,	Súya.	Gen. de ſus,	Súyos, Súyas.
Dat.	para ſu,	Súyo,	Súya.	Dat. para ſus,	Súyos, Súyas.
Accu.	a ſu,	Súyo,	Súya.	Accuſ. a ſus	Súyos, Súyas.
Abl.	de ſu,	Súyo,	Súya.	Abl. de ſus,	Súyos, Súyas.

I proceed with the examples of all the Pronounes following by declining them, becauſe as I before ſaid, it is one of the difficulteſt things in the tongue to haue the true vſe of them, and whereby a ſtranger or the vnlearned in his ſpeech or writing, ſhall ſoneſt diſcouer himſelfe to the naturall or learned in the tongue. Wherefore let not onely the tongue learner, but alſo the well grounded, and thoſe that are able to diſcourſe and write the tongue well, obſerue how and when theſe Pronounes following (ſo little differing the one from the other) are to be vſed in their due time and place as followeth: *Nota the difference of theſe Pronounes following.*

These two, E'ſte and Aquéſte, doe ſignifie vnto vs any thing that is neere vs, in that ſignification as the Latine, *Hic, hæc, hoc*: in Italian, *Coteſto, Coteſta, Coſtuy, Coſtei, Queſto, Queſta*: in French, *Ceſtuy cy, Ceſte cy, Cecy*: in Engliſh, this here, or this man heere. They doe differ thus, E'ſte, Aquéſte.

E'ſte and Aquéſte, in Latine, *Hic*, is he, or that which is neere or next to me. *Nota.*

E'ſſe, in Latine, *Iſte*, he or that, neere or next to thee. E'ſte, Aquéſte.

Aquél and El, in Latine, *Ille*, is he, or that which is neither by me nor thee, but a part from vs both. E'ſſe. Aquél, El.

Example.

Example.

E'ſt

	Maſcul.	Fem.	Neu.		Maſcul.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom. éſte,	éſta,	éſto.	Plu.	Nom. éſtos,	éſtas.
	Gen. déſte,	déſta	déſto.		Gen. déſtos,	déſtas.
	Dat. para éſte,	para éſta,	para éſto.		Dat. para éſtos,	para éſtas,
	Accuſ. a éſte,	a éſta,	a éſto.		Accuſ. a éſtos,	a éſtas,
	Abl. déſte,	déſta,	déſto.		Abl. déſtos,	déſtas.

In the ſingular number of this Pronoune, the firſt words in e, as éſte, déſte, para éſte, &c. are of the Maſculine gender: the ſecond, éſta, déſta, para éſta, &c. of the Feminine: the third, as éſto, déſto, &c. of the Neuter: but in the Plurall, the firſt is the Maſculine and Neuter: the other the Feminine gender.

Nota. In the Genitiue caſe, we ſay déſte, and déſtos, caſting away the firſt e, *Euphoniæ gratia*, that it might ſound the ſmoother, yet one may alſo ſay, de éſte, de éſtos.

Aquéſte. Aquéſte, Aquéſta, Aquéſto, declined as in the example next aboue, and ſo is

E'ſſe. E'ſſe, E'ſſa, E'ſſo: in Latine, *Iſte, Iſta, Iſtud*: the Italians and French haue no proper words to expreſſe it, but muſt vſe circumlocution: in Engliſh, he or that, neere or next to thee.

Miſmo. Miſmo, Miſma, Miſmo, declined after the ſame.

Aquél, El.

Aquél, and El: in Latine, *Ille, illa, illud*: Italian, *Quello, colui, quella, Colei*: French, *Celuy iceluy, Celle, icelle*, he or that which is neither neere me nor thee, declined both alike.

Nota. Note that this El a Pronoune, and El the Article doe differ in declining, ſpecially in the plurall number. This making E'llos, and that Los, as by comparing the one with the other, the Reader may ſee. Looke the declining of the Article El, before in the Noune.

	Maſcul.	Fem.	Neu.		Maſcul.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom. el,	élla,	éllo.	Plu.	Nom. éllos,	éllas.
	Gen. dél,	d'élla,	d'éllo.		Gen. d'éllos,	d'éllas.
	Dat. para el,	para élla,	para éllo.		Dat. Para éllos,	para éllas.
	Acc. a el,	a élla,	a éllo.		Accu. a éllos,	a éllas.
	Abl. d' el,	d' élla,	d' ello.		Abl. d'éllos,	d'éllas.

Nota. Note that the Spaniard commonly vſeth this Pronoune Le before a Verbe thus, Le víno a la memoria, it came to his memorie: Le díxo, he told him: Que del alma le ſalía, which came from his ſoule: Dar le lo, to giue him that: Le reſpondió, he anſwered him.

Nota. Alſo the Spaniard vſeth this Pronoune Le ioyned to the Infinitiue mode of a verbe, by changing r of the Infinitiue into l, *Euphoniæ gratia*, as Hablárle, to ſpeake vnto him, Habláſle: Oýrle, to heare him, Oýlle: Vérle, to ſee him, Velle.

Now followeth Que, Quien, El Qual, in Latine *Quis, Qui, Que, Quod*, in Italian, *Chi, Che, Il Quale, La Quale*, in French, *Qui, Lequel, Laquelle*, in Engliſh, Who, which, thus.

Que, Quien.

Sing. and Plural.	Nom.	Qué.
	Gen.	de Qué.
	Dat.	para Qué.
	Accuſ.	a Qué.
	Ablat.	de Qué.

In this ſame manner is Quien declined.

El qual.

El qual.

	Maſc.	Fem.	Neut.		Maſc.	Fem.
Sing.	Nom. el qual,	la qual,	lo qual.	Plu.	Nom. los quales,	las quales.
	Gen. del qual,	de la qual,	de lo qual.		Gen. de los quales,	de las quales.
	Dat. para qual,	para la qual,	para lo qual.		Da. para los quales,	para las quales.
	Accuſ. al qual,	a la qual,	a lo qual.		Accuſ. a los quales,	a las quales.
	Ablat. del qual,	de la qual,	de lo qual.		Ablat. de los quales,	de las quales.

Verbes.

Of Verbes.

Verbe paſſiue. The Spaniſh tongue hath the ſame kinde of Verbes, Moods, Tenſes, Numbers, and Perſons as the Latine. But for the verbe paſſiue, they make of the verbe Soy, in Latine, *Sum, es, fui*, and a participle, as Amádo, Leýdo, Partído, as Soi Amádo, Leýdo, Partído, I am loued, read, parted, or with this Accuſatiue caſe or particle Se, with the third perſon actiue ſingular or plurall, as Se dize, it is ſaid, Se dízen, they are ſaid, as hereafter in their place more at large ſhall be declared.

Gerunds. Alſo they haue the Gerund in Do in the ſame manner as the Latines, as Amándo, Leyéndo, Oyéndo,

Oyéndo, in Louing, Reading, Hearing. But for the Gerund in Di and Dum of the Latine, they expresse after another manner. For Gerund in Di the Spaniard vseth the Infinitiue moode and the preposition De, as De amár, of Louing, De leer, of Reading. For the Gerund in Dum, the Infinitiue moode and the Preposition A, or the Infinitiue moode of Soy with a Participle, as A amár, or Ser amádo, to be Loued, A oy'r or Ser oy'do, to be Heard.

And in like manner their Supines, whereas the Latines say, *Amatum*, *Amatu*, they say, A amár. De ser amádo. *Supines.*

And for Participles of the Actiue voice, *Amans*, El que áma.
For Participle of the Passiue voice, *Amatus*, Lo que es amádo. *Participles.*
For Participle of the Future in *Rus*, *Amaturus*, El que ha o espéra de amár.
For Participle of the Future in *Dus*, *Amandus*, Lo que ha de ser amádo.

All which by particular examples following shall plainly to the Reader appeare.

Of Coniugations.

The Spanish hath three coniugations onely both of Verbes Regular, and Irregular,

1 The first endeth in ar, as Mirár, to behold: Hablár, to speake.
2 The second in er, as Perdér, to lose: Caér, to fall.
3 The third in yr or ir, as oy'r, to heare: Cumplír, to accomplish.

Tenses.

The first Person singular of the Indicatiue moode Present tense of all Verbes Regular, of what Coniugation soeuer, alwaies endeth in o, Míro, I behold, Háblo, I speake, Piérdo, I lose: Oygo, I heare.

Indicatiue Mood.

Euerie:
- Preterimperfect of the Indicatiue, of Verbes Regular, of the second and third Coniugation in ia, or ya, as Perdía, I did lose: Cay'a, I did fall, &c. Oy'a, I did heare, Complía, I did accomplish, &c. And of the first coniugation all in áva, as Miráva, I did behold: Habláva, I did speake.
- First Preterperfect in y, or i, as oy', perdi, I haue heard, I haue lost: but of the first Coniugation all in é, as Miré, I haue beholden: Hablé, I haue spoken.
- Second Preterperfect of all the three Coniugations of al Verbs with this Verbe Hé, and the Participle, as Hé mirádo, I haue beholden: Hé ley'do, I haue read: Hé oy'do, I haue heard.
- Preterpluperfect thus, avía mirádo, ley'do, oy'do, I had beholden, read, heard.
- Future, of the Indicatiue of all Verbes Regular,, and Irregular in ré, as Hablá-re, I will speake: Leyré, oyeré, haré, podré, sabré, Daré.

The Terminations of Verbs thus varied as followeth.

Euerie	Imperfect of the Indicatiue of the second and third Coniugation thus varied;	ía, ías, ía, íamos, íades, ían,	or	y'a, y'as, y'a, y'amos, y'ades. y'an,	as	Perdía, Perdías, Perdía, Perdíamos, Perdíades, Perdían.	as	oy'a, oy'as, oy'a, oy'amos, oy'ades, oy'an,

Euerie: Imperfect of the Indicatiue of the first Coniugation, in áva, ávas, áva: ávamos, ávades, ávan, as Habláva, hablávas, habláva, hablávamos, hablávades, hablávan.

Euerie	Future of the Indicatiue of all Verbes of all Coniugations.	ré, rás, ra, rémos, reys, ran.	of first, second, and third, Coniugation in	ár, ér, ír,	hablaré, perderé, oyré,	by adding é long or accent to the Infin. moode r.

The

The Terminations of the Optatiue and Subiunctiue.

Euerie Present Tenſe of the Optatiue and Subiunctiue of Verbes of the firſt Coniugation thus, by changing o, of the Indicatiue Present tenſe into e, thus,

e,	as	háble,
es,		háblés,
e,		háble,
émos,		hablémos.
éys,		hablés,
en,		háblen.

Euerie Present of the Optatiue and Subiunctiue of the ſecond and third Coniugation, by changing o, of the Present of the Indicatiue into a, thus,

a,	perda,
as,	perdas,
a,	pérda,
ámos,	perdámos,
ays,	perdays,
án.	pérdan.

Euerie Preterimper. of the Optatiue & Subiunctiue of Verbes of the firſt Coniugation thus,

ára, ría, áſſe,	hablára, hablaría, habláſſe,
áras, rías, áſſes,	habláras, hablarías, habláſſes,
ára, ría, áſſe,	hablára, hablaría, habláſſe,
áramos, ríamos, áſſemos,	habláramos, hablaríamos, habláſſemos,
árades, ríades, áſſedes,	hablárades, hablaríades, habláſſedes,
áran, rían, áſſen,	habláran, hablarían, habláſſen.

Euerie Preterimperfect of the Optatiue & Subiunctiue of the ſecond & third Coniugation thus,

éra, ria, éſſe,	perdiéra, perdería, perdiéſſe,
éras, rías, éſſes,	perdiéras, perderías,, perdiéſſes,
éra, ría, éſſe,	perdiéra, perdería, perdiéſſes,
éramos, ríamos, éſſemos,	perdiéramos, perderíamos, perdiéſſemos,
érades, ríades, eſſedes,	perdiérades, perderíades, perdiéſſedes,
éran, rían, éſſen,	perdiéran, perderían, perdiéſſen.

And theſe Preterimperfect Tenſes as all other of what Coniugation ſoeuer, of Verbes Regular, and Irregular, foꝛme two voyces of the miſe liues of the ſecond perſon ſingular of the firſt Preterfect Tenſe of the Indicatiue mode, by taking away Ste, and by making it in the firſt Coniugation, ára; and áſſe, as of this ſecond perſon of the Preterperfect of the Indicatiue ſingular, Reveláſte,, commeth the Preterimperfect of the Optatiue. and Subiunctiue Revelára, Reveláſſe, and of the ſecond and third Coniugation of all Verbes Regular and Irregular, by changing that ſte, into éra and éſſe, as of this Indicatiue mood entendíſte, commeth the Preterimperfect of the Optatiue and Subiunctiue, entendiéra, entendiéſſe, of oyſte, commeth oyéra, oyéſſe: of diſte, diéra, diéſſe: of eſtuviſte, eſtuviéra, eſtuviéſſe: of anduviſte, anduviéra, anduviéſſe: of pudiſte, pudiéra, pudiéſſe. And they foꝛme the third voyce of this Preterimperfect by putting to ia, to the Infinitiue mood, as of the Infinitiue revelar, commeth this Preterimperfect revelaría, of the Infinitiue entendér, entendería, of oyr, oyría, of dár, daría: of eſtár, eſtaría, andár, andaría.

Euery Future of the Optatiue and Subiunctiue of verbes of the firſt coniugation, thus,

áre,	as	Habláre.
áres,		Habláres.
áre,		Habláre.
áremos,		Habláremos.
áredes,		Habláredes.
áren.		Habláren.

Euery Future of the ſecond & third Coniugation of the Opt. and Subiunctiue, thus,

ére,	as	Perdiére,	Oyére.
éres,		Perdiéres,	Oyéres.
ére,		Perdiére,	Oyére.
éremos,		Perdiéremos,	Oyéremos.
éredes,		Perdiéredes,	Oyéredes.
éren.		Perdiéren.	Oyéren.

Now it remaineth to giue a *Paradigma* oꝛ example of euery Coniugation of their Moodes, Tenſes, Numbers and Perſons, that the Student in the tongue may foꝛme the reſt by, which is the chiefeſt point of this our *Grammar*, and without the which the learner ſhall neuer be able to wꝛite oꝛ ſpeake but by aime and rote, and ſo be diſcouraged from ſo laudable a purpoſe.

And

And for the better delight of the Reader, and for the affinitie of these two tongues, as for the pleasure and profit he may reape hereby, I haue here in the Examples following, set downe the *Italian*, that the vnderstander of both tongues may with one labour (and yet at his ease) see the difference the one from the other, and be hereby able in vnderstanding, writing and speaking, to practise either of them, without vsing the one for the other, or mixing them (a thing offensiue to the Spaniards nature, as all know who haue trauelled in Spaine.) For euen as two things very like one to the other, if you see them at diuers times, and in diuers places, may easily make one miscarrie his memorie, and mistake the one for the other, when you see either of them againe by it selfe: so if you see them both at one time, and in one place together, and take good heed of them by comparing them, no doubt by one marke or other, you shall euer after be able to discerne, know and call them: Euen so these two languages (sometime altogether so like) being thus laid together, will cause the Reader easily to discerne and remember them.

Why the Italian added to the verbes following.

Avér *and* Sér.

And because this Verbe Avér, in Latine *Habere*, in Italian *Hauere*, in French *Auoir*, in English to Haue, and Sér, in Latine *Esse*, Italian *Essere*, French *Estre*, English to Be, doe serue to the coniugating or declining of all other Verbes: They are best in my opinion first to be declined, especially this Verbe Avér, which may fitly be called *Verbum auxiliarium*, a helpfull Verbe, because he doth not only helpe to decline himselfe in his owne preterperfect and preterpluperfect, but doth serue to decline all other Verbes whatsoeuer in the same tenses, as by the Examples following you may see. And this Verbe Sér, as before, serueth, as in the Italian and French to decline all Verbes Passiues, for without it neither the Spanish, Italian, or French, can forme or decline their Passiues, as following you may perceiue.

Avér *and* Sér.

Oo The

The Seuerall verbes conjugated in this grammar

	page
Aver - to haue	22
ser - to bee	24
revelar, to reveal	26
entender to vnderstand	29
oyr - to heare	31
ser revelado to be revealed	33
dar to giue	35
estar to stand or bee	38
andar to go	41
traer to fetch or bring	43
saber to know	46
tener to hold	48
poder to be able	50
querer, to will, to loue or to be willing	52
poner, to putt, to place	54
hazer to do - to make	56
caber to conteine or to be conteyned	58
ver - to see	60
venir to come	61
dezir to speak	63
yr - to goe	66
verbs impersonall	69

AVE'R declined.

The declining of the first Auxiliar verbe Avér, *in Italian* *Hauere*, in Latine *Habere*, in English to Haue.

Indicatiue moode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	Yo HE, Tu ás, Aquél á or há. **Plural.** nosótros Avémos or Hémos, vosótros Avéys, aquellos án or hán.	*Io Ho & Haggio, Poeticall,* *tu Hai,* *colui há, & háue, Poeticall.* **Plural.** *Noi habbiámo & hauémo,* *voi Hauéte,* *colóro Hánno.*	*Ego HABEO,* *tu Habes,* *ille Habet,* **Plural.** *Nos Habemus.* *vos Habetis.* *illi Habent.*	I Haue. thou Hast. he Hath. Plural. we Haue. yee Haue. they Haue.
Imperfect.	Avía, Avías, Avía. **Plur.** Avíamos, Avíades, Avían.	*Hauéua & Hauéa,* *Hauéui,* *Hauéua & Hauéa.* **Plur.** *Haueuámo & haueámo,* *Haueuáte,* *Hauéuano & hauéano.*	*Habebam,* *habebas,* *habebat, &c.*	I Had, thou Hadst, &c.
First preter-perfect.	úve, uvíste, úvo or húvo or óvo, Uvímos, uvístes, uviéron or huviéron or oviéron.	*Hébbi,* *hauésti,* *hébbe.* *Hauémmo,* *hauéste,* *hébbero.*	*Habui,* *Habuisti, &c.*	I haue had, &c.
Secōd perfect.	yo He, tu ás, aquél á or ha. nosótros hémos or avémos, vosótros aveys, aquéllos án or hán.	Avído *Io Ho,* *tu hai,* *colui ha,* *noi habbiámo,* *voi hauéte,* *colóro hanno.*	*hauúto* *Habui,* *habuisti,* *&c.*	I haue Had, &c.
pluperfect tēse	Avía, avías, avía. Avíamos, avíades, avían.	Avído *Hauéua,* *hauéui,* *hauéua.* *haueuámo,* *haueuáte,* *hauéuano.*	*hauúto* *Habuerā,* *&c.*	I had Had, &c.
Futur.	Avré, Avrás, Avrá. Avrémos, Avreys, Avrán.	*Haueró, hauró & haró,* *hauerái, haurai & harái,* *hauerá, haurá & hará.* *Hauerémo, haurémo & harémo,* *haueréte, hauréte & haréte,* *haueránno, hauránno & haránno.*	*Habebo,* *&c.*	I shal or will haue, &c.

Imperatiue moode.

have	áyas tu, áya aquel, ayámos nosótros, ayáys vosótros, áyan aquéllos.	*Habbi tu,* *habbia colui,* *habbiámo noi,* *habbiáte voi,* *habbiano colóro.*	*Habe, habeto, &c.*	Haue thou, &c.

The Spaniards vse in stead of this Imperatiue mood, this word Ten of Tengo, I hold: which Tengo is often vsed of them for this verbe He.

This

AVER declined.

This Imperatiue moode, Ten of Tengo, so commonly vsed for áyas, áya, is thus declined;

The Imperatiue of Tenér, ordinarily vsed for the Imperat. of AVER, to Haue.	Tén tu,	Hold thou.
	Ténga aquel,	let him Hold.
	Tengámos nosótros,	Hold we, or let vs Hold.
	Tenéd vosótros,	Hold yee.
	Téngan aquéllos,	Hold they, or let them Hold.

The Optatiue moode is vsed with these signes, Oxalá, or else Osi, or Pluguiésse a Dios: in Latine, *Vtinam:* In Italian, *O Dio voglia, O che, Dio volesse che, O Dio che:* French, *Dieu vuelle, Pleust a Dieu:* English, would to God, I pray God, God grant. The Potentiall like the Latine, with these signes, May, Can, Might, Would, Should, or ought: both declined like the Subiunctiues following: but that the Optatiue and Potentiall alwayes make their Future tense and Present tense all alike, as Oxalá yo áya, I pray God I haue: so in the Future, Oxalá yo áya, I pray God I haue hereafter: Oxalá yo Revéle, God grant I reueale: Future tense also, Oxalá yo Revéle, God grant I reueale hereafter: and so of the rest. *Nota.*

And because the Optatiue and Potentiall haue their Future tenses all one with their Present: and the Subiunctiue hath two Futures, and both differing from the Present, I hold it needfull to decline the Subiunctiue, by whom the other two are framed.

Subiunctiue moode.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	áya, áyas, áya. ayámos, ayáys. áyan.	*Quando*	*Hábbia, Habbi, Hábbia. Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hábbiano.*	*Cum*	*Habeam, Habeas, &c.*	when I Had, when thou Hadst, &c.
Imperf. Como	auría, uviéra, uviésse, aurías, uviéras, uviésses, auría, uviéra, uviésse. auríamos, uviéramos, uviéssemos, auríades, uviérades, uviéssedes, aurían, uviéran, uviéssen.	*Quando*	*haueréi, haueria, hauéssi, haueréſti, haueſti, haueſſi, hauerebbe, haueria, hauéſſe. hauerémmo, hauéſſimo, haueréſte, hauéſte, hauerébbono, haueriano, hauéſſero.*	*Cum*	*haberem, &c.*	when I Had, or did haue, &c.

Or decline with H. Huviéra, Huviésse, or Oviéra, Oviésse.

Perfec. Como	áya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan,	avído. *Quando*	*hábbia, habbi, hábbia. habbiámo, habbiáte, hábbiano,*	*Hauúto. Cum*	*habuerim, &c.*	when I haue had, &c.
Pluper. Como	uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse. uviéramos or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen.	avído. *Quando*	*haueſſi, haueſti, haueſſe. hauéſſimo. haueſte, hauéſſero.*	*hauúto. Cum*	*habuiſſem, &c.*	when I had had, &c.
First future. Como	uviére, uviéres, uviére. uviéremos, uviéredes, uviéren.	*Quando*	*haueró, hauerái, hauerá. hauerémo, haueréte, haueránno.*	*hauúto. Cum*	*habuero, &c.*	when I shall haue hereafter, &c.

Second Future Como: auré, aurás, aurá, auremos, aureys, aurán. avído. Quando: haueró, haueraí, haueráno. haueremo, haueréte, haueránno. hauúto. Cum: habuero, &c. When I ſhall haue hereafter, &c.

Infinitiue mod Preſent tenſe

AVE'R,] Hauere,] Habere.] to Haue.

Preterperfect tenſe.

Avér avído,] Hauer hauúto,] Habuiſſe,] to Haue had.

The Future tenſe.

Eſpéro de avér,] Douer hauere, Eſſer per hauer, } Habiturum eſſe,] to Haue hereafter.

Gerund

Aviéndo,] Hauendo,] Habendo,] in Hauing.

Participle

Avído,] Haunto,] Habitus,] I Had.

Participle of the Future tenſe.

El que eſpéra de avér,] Eſſere per hauere,] Habiturus,] to Haue hereafter.

SER *The other verbum Auxiliarium* Sér, *with which all Paſſiues are declined:* it is in Latine *Sum, es, fui:* in Italian *Eſſere*, to Bée.

Infinitiue mod

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latine.	
Preſent.	Yo SO'Y,	Io SONO,	Sum,	I Am,
	tu éres,	tu sêi,	es,	thou Art,
	aquél és.	colui é.	eſt.	he Is, &c.
	Plu.	Plu.	Plu.	
	noſotros Sómos,	Noiſtamo,	Sumus,	
	voſotros ſóis,	voi séte,	eſtis,	
	aquéllos són.	coloro ſóno.	ſunt.	
Imperf.	éra,	éra,	eram,	I was, &c.
	éras,	éri,	eras, &c.	
	éra.	era.		
	éramos,	erámo, et erauámo,		
	érades,	erauáte,		
	éran.	érano.		
First Preter-perfect.	Fúy,	Fui,	Fui, &c.	I haue bœne, &c.
	fúiſte,	ſoſti,		
	Fúe.	ſú.		
	Fúimos,	Fúmo,		
	fúiſtes,	ſóſte,		
	fuéron.	fúrono, ſúron, et ſúro.		
Second Preter-perfect.	He, or úve, ás, or uviſte, á, or úvo.	Sido. Sóno, sei, e. Stato.	Fui, &c.	I haue bœne, &c.
	Avémos, or uvímos, auéys, or uviſtes, án, or uviéron,	Sido. Siámo, séte, ſóno, Stati.		
Pluperf.	Avía, auías, avía.	Sido. éra, éri, éra, Stato.	Fueram, &c.	I had bœne, &c.
	Avíamos, aviades, avían,	eranámo, erauate, eráno, Stati.		

Future

Future	Seré,	Saró, & sia,	Ero, &c.	I shall or will be.
	serás,	sarái,		
	será.	sará & sia.		
	Serémos,	Sarémo,		
	seréys,	saréte,		
	serán.	saránno.		

Imperatiue moode.

Sé tu, or sey tu,	Sij, sia, & sie tu,	Sis, es, esto,	Be thou,
séa aquél,	sia, & sie colui,	sit, esto,	Be he or let him be, &c.
Seámos nosótros,	Siámo noi,	Simus,	
séd vosótros,	siáte voi,	sitis, estote,	
séan aquéllos.	siano coloro.	sint, sunto.	

Subiunctiue moode.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	yo SE'A,	Quando	Io SIA,	Cum	sim,	when I am, &c.
	tu séas,		tu sij, sia,		sis, &c.	
	aquél sea,		colui sia, sie,			
	seámos,		siámo,			
	seáys,		siáte,			
	séan.		siaon, & sieno.			
Imperfect. Como	fuéra, sería, fuésse,	Quando	sarei, fóssi, fussi,	Cum	essem, &c.	when I was.
	fuéras, serías, fuésses,		saresti, fóssi, fussi,			
	fuéra, sería, fuésse,		sarebbe, fosse, fusse,			
	fuéramos, seríamos, fuéssemos,		saremmo, fóssimo, fussimo,			
	fuérades, seríades, fuéssedes,		sareste, fóste, fuste, (fussero			
	fuéran, serían, fuéssen.		sarébbono, sariano, fossero,			
Preter perfect. Como	áya,	Quando	sia,	Cum	fuerim &c.	when I haue bœne, &c.
	áyas,		sij, } stato.			
	áya,		sia,			
	ayámos,		siámo,			
	ayáys,		siáte, } stati.			
	áyan, } Sído.		siaon,			
Pluperfect. Como	uviéra or uviésse,	Quando	fóssi, sarei,	Cum	fuissem, &c.	when I had bœne, &c.
	uviéras or uviésses,		fóssi, saresti, } stato.			
	uviéra or uviésse,		fósse, sarebbe,			
	uviéramos, or uviéssemos,	Sído	fóssimo, saremmo,			
	uviérades, or uviéssedes,		fósse, sarete, } stati			
	uviéran or uviéssen,		fóssero, sarebbono,			
first Futur. Como	fuére,	Quando	saró,		fuero, &c.	when I shal be, &c.
	fuéres,		sarái, } stato.			
	fuére,		sará,			
	fuéremos,		sarémo,			
	fuéredes,		sarete, } stati.			
	fuéren,		saránno,			

second Futur. Como	avré, avrás, avrá, avrémos, avréys, avrán,	Sído.	*Quando,*	*saró, sarái, sará,*	*stato.*	*Cum* *fuero, &c.* When I shall be, &c.
				sarémo, saréte, saránno,	*stati.*	

Infinitiue moode, Present Tense.

SER,] *Essere,*] *Esse,*] To be.

Preterperfect and Pluperfect,

AVE'R sido,] *Esser stato,*] *fuisse,*] To haue beene.

Future Tense.

Auér de sér, *douer essere, hauer ad essere,* *fore, futurum esse,* To be hereafter.

Gerund.

Siéndo,] *Essendo,*] The Latine wants,] In being.

Participle.

SI'DO] stato,] beene.

1. Coniug. of Regular Verbes in AR, REVELAR

An Example of the first Coniugation of Verbes Regular in AR, as Revelár] in Italian *Riueláre*] Latine *Reueláre*] in English] to Reueale or discouer, as Revelár, in Spanish is also as Rebelár, to rebell.

Indicatiue moode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	yo REVE'LO, tu Revélas, aquel revéla, revelámos, reveláys, revélan.	*IO RIVE'LO, tu riuéli, colúi reuéla, riueliámo, riueláte, riuélano,*	*Reuelo, reuelas, reuelat, &c.*	I reueale, Thou reuealest, &c.
Imperfect.	reveláva, revelávas, reveláva, revelávamos, revelávades, revelávan,	*riueláua, riueláui, riueláua, riueláuamo, riuelauáte, riueláuano,*	*reuelabam, &c.*	I did reueale.
First Perf.	revelé, reveláste, reveló, revelámos, reveláſtes, reveláron,	*riuelái, riuelásti, riueló, riuelámmo, riueláste, riuelárono, riueláron, riueláro, riuelár.*	*reuelaui, &c.*	I haue reuealed, &c.

second

second perfect.	hé, or úve, ás, or uvíste, á, or úvo, avémos, or uvímos avéys, or uvístes, án, or uviéron,	reveládo.	*ho,* *hái,* *há,* *habbiámo,* *habbiáte,* *hánno.*	*riueláto*	*reuelaui, &c.*	I haue reuealed, &c.
Plu-perfect.	avía, avías, avía, avíamos, avíades, avían,	reveládo.	*hauéua,* *hauéui,* *hauéua,* *haueuámo,* *haueuáte,* *hauéuano,*	*riueláto*	*reuelaueram, &c.*	I had reuealed, &c.
Futur.	revelaré, revelarás, revelará, revelarémos, revelaréys, revelarán,		*riuelaró,* *riuelarái,* *reuelará,* *riuelarémo,* *riuelaréte,* *riuelaránno,*		*reuelabo, &c.*	I shall or will reueale, &c.

Oftentimes for the Future of this Indicatiue Moode, as well of this first Coniugation, as of all the rest, is vsed the Infinitiue Moode, and the Present tense of the Verbe Avér, with a Particle going betweene them, as Revelár lo hé, Revelár lo hás, Revelár lo á. And so of the other Coniugations, as Entendér lo hé, Entendér lo ás, oy'r lo hé, oyr lo hás, &c. *Nota.*

Imperatiue moode.

revéla tu, revéle aquel, Plu. revelémos nosótros, reuelád vosótros, revélan aquéllos,	*riuéla tu,* *riueli colúi,* *riuelámo noi,* *riueláte voi,* *riuélino colóro,*	*reuéla, reueláto* *reuelet, reuelato* *reuelemus,* *reuelatis,* *reuelent.*	Reueale thou, be thou reuealed, &c.

revélen

Subiunctiue moode with signes, Si, Como, or other Coniunction.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.		
Pres. Como	Yo Revéle, tu Revéles, aquel Revéle. Plurall. Revelémos, Reveléys, Revélen.	*Quando*	*Io Riuéli,* *tu Riuéli,* *colúi Riuéli.* Plurall. *Riueliámo,* *Riueliáte,* *Riuélino.*	*Cum* *Reuelem, &c.*	when I doe Reueale, &c.
Imperfect. Como	Revelára, revelaría, revelásse, Reveláras, revelarías, revelásses, Revelára, revelaría, revelásse, Reveláramos, revelaríamos, revelássemos Revelárades, revelaríades, revelássedes, Reveláran, revelarían, revelássen.	*Quando*	*Riuelassi, riuelaréi, riuelaría,* *Riuelásti, riuelaresti,* *Riuelasse, riuelarébbe, riuelaría* *Riuelássimo, riuelarémmo,* *Riuelaste, riuelaréste,* *Riuelassero, riuelarébbono, riuelaríano*	*Cum* *Reuelarem, &c.*	when I did Reueale, &c.

Perfect

perfect Como	áya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan,	Reveládo.	Quando	Hábbia, Hábbi, Hábbia, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hábbiano,	Riuelato.	Cum Reuelauerim, &c.	when I haue reuealed, &c.
Plu-perfect. Como	uviéra or uviésse, uviéras or uviésses, uviéra or uviésse, uviéramos or uviéssemos, uviérades or uviéssedes, uviéran or uviéssen,	Reveládo.	Quando	Hauéssi, hauésti, hauesse, hauéssim, hauéste, hauéssero,	Riuelato.	Cum Reuelassem, &c.	when I had reuealed, &c.
First future. Como	Reveláre, Reveláres, Reveláre, Revelarémos, Reveláredes, Reveláren,		Quando	Haueró, hauerái, hauerá, hauerémo. hauerete, hauerannо,	Riueláto.	Cum Reuelauero, &c.	when I shall or will Reueale, &c.
Secōd future. Como	uviére or avré, uviéres or avrés, uviére or avrá, uvierémos or avrémos, uviéredes or avréys, uviéren or avrán,	Reveládo.	Quando	Haueró, hauerái, hauerá, hauerémo, hauerete, hauerannо,	Riuelato.	Cum Reuelauero, &c.	when I shall or will Reueale, &c.

Infinitiue mode Present tense.

Revelár,] *Riuelare,*] *Reuelare,*] to Reueale or discouer.

Preterperfect tense.

Aver reveládo,] *Hauer riuelato,*] *Reuelauisse,*] to haue reuealed.

The Future tense.

Avér o Esperár de Revelár, { *Douer Riuelare, Essere per Riuelare, Hauer a Riuelare,* } to Reueale hereafter.

Gerund.

Revelándo,] *Riuelando,*] *Reuelando,*] in Reuealing.

Supine of the Actiue signification.

a Revelár,] *a Riuelare,*] *Reuelatum*] to be about to Reueale.

Supine of the Passiue signification.

De sér Revelado] *D'essere Riuelato*] *Reuelatu*] to be Reuealed.

Participle of the Present tense and Actiue voice.

El que Revéla,] *Riuelante,*] *Reuelans*] Reuealing.

Participle of the Preter tense and Passiue voice.

Reveládo,] *Riuelato,*] *Reuelatus,*] Reuealed.

All verbs which haue their Infinitiues in AR, are declined in all points like this here declined, except the Irregulars here following in ar.

An

An Example of the second Coniugation of verbes *Regular in* ER, *as* Entendér, *in Italian Intendere*, Latine *Intelligere*, to Understand.

2. *Coniug. of Regular verbs in* er Entendér.

Indicatiue moode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	yo ENTIE'NDO, tu Entiéndes, aquel Entiénde. **Plurall.** Entendémos, Entendéys, Entiénden.	*Io Intendo* *tu Intendi,* *colúi Inténde.* **Plu.** *Intendiámo.* *Intendéte,* *Intendíno.*	*Intelligo, &c.*	I do Understand, &c.
Imperfect.	Entendía, Entendías, Entendía, Entendíamos, Entendíades, Entendían,	*Intendéua & Intendéa,* *Intendéui,* *Intendéua & Intendéa,* *Intendeuámo,* *Intendeuáte,* *Intendéuano.*	*Intelligebam, &c.*	I did Understand, &c.
First perfect.	Entendí, Entendíste, Entendió, Entendímos, Entendístes, Entendiéron.	*Intési,* *Intendísti,* *Intése,* *Intendémmo,* *Intendéste,* *Intésero.*	*Intellexi, &c.*	I haue Understood, &c.
Secōd perfect.	He or úve, ás or uvíste, á or úvo. hémos or uvímos, avéys or uvístes án or uviéron, Entendído.	*HO* *hái* *ha* *Intéso.* *habbiámo* *hauéte* *hánno* *Intési.*	*Intellexi, &c.*	I haue Understood, &c.
pluperfect tēse	Avía, avías, avía. Avíamos, avíades, avían, Entendído.	*hauéua* *hauéui* *hauéua* *Intéso.* *haueuámo* *haueuáte* *hauéuano* *Intési.*	*Intellexeram, &c*	I had Understood, &c.
Futur.	Entenderé, Entenderás, Entenderá. Entenderémos, Entenderéys, Entenderán,	*Intenderó,* *Intenderái,* *Intenderá,* *Intenderémo,* *Intenderéte,* *Intenderánno.*	*Intelligam, &c.*	I shall or wil Understand.

Imperatiue moode.

Entiénde tu, Entiénde aquel. Entendámos nosótros, Entendéd vosótros, Entiéndan aquellos.	*Intendi tu.* *Intenda colui,* *Intendiámo noi,* *Intendéte voi,* *Inténdano coloro.*	*Intellige, Intelligito,* *Intelligat, Intelligito.*	Understand thou, Understand he or let him vnderstand.

Second

Entendér.

Second Coniugation of Regular Verbes in ER, *as* ENTENDER.

Subiunctiue mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.
Pres. Como	yo ENTIE'NDA, tu entiéndas, aquel entiénda, Plu. entendámos, entendáys, entiéndan.	Quando: *yo INTENDA,* *tu intendi,* *colui intenda,* Plu. *intendiámo,* *intendiate,* *inténdano,*	Cum: *intelligam &c.* — when I doe vnderstand, &c.
Imperfect. Como	entendiéra, entenderia, entendiésse, entendiéras, entenderias, entendiésses, entendiéra, entenderia, entendiésses, entendiéramos, entenderiamos, entendiéssemos, entendiérades, entenderiades, entendiéssedes, entendiéran, entenderian, entendiéssen.	Quando: *intenderei, intenderia, intendessi,* *intenderesti, intendéssi,* *intenderebbe, intenderia, intendesse,* *intenderémo, intendissimo,* *intenderésti, intendésti,* *intenderébbero, intenderieno, intendessero,*	Cum: *intelligerem, &c.* — when I did vnderstand.
Perf. Como	áya, áyas, áya, áyamos, ayáys, áyan. } Entendído.	Quando: *hábbia,* *hábbi,* *hábbia,* } *inteso.* *habbiámo,* *habbiate,* *habbiano,* } *intesi.*	Cum: *intellexerim, &c.* — when I haue vnderstood, &c.
Pluperfect. Como	uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen, } Entendido	Quando: *haueréi, & hauéssi,* *haueréſti, & hauessi,* *hauerebbe, & hauesse,* } *inteso.* *hauerémmo, & hauessimo,* *haueréste, & hauéste,* *hauerébbero, & hauessero,* } *intesi.*	Cum: *intellexissem, &c.* — when I had vnderstood.
First future. Como	Entendiére, entendiéres, entendiére, entendiéremos, entendiéredes, entendiéren.		Cum: *intellexero &c.* — when I shal or wil vnderstand, &c.
second future. Como	uviére, or auré, uviéres, or aurás. uviére, or aurá, uviéremos, or aurémos, uviéredes, or auréys, uviéren, or aurán, } Entendído	Quando: *hauero,* *hauerái,* *hauerá,* } *inteso.* *hauerémo,* *haueréte,* *haueránno,* } *intesi.*	Cum: *intellexero &c.* — when I shal vnderstand, &c.

Infinitiue mood Present Tense.

Entendér,] *Intendere,*] *Intelligere*] To vnderstand.

Preterperfect Tense.

auér entendído,] *hauer inteso,*] *intellexisse,*] To haue vnderstood.

The Future Tense.

aver o Esperár de entendér, { *douer intendere,* / *hauer ad intendere,* / *Esser per intendere,* } *intellecturum,* to vnderstand hereafter.

Gerund

entendiéndo,] *intendendo,*] *intelligendo*] In vnderstanding.

Supines of the actiue voice.

a entendér,] *ad intendere*] *intellectum*] To vnderstand.

Supine of the passiue voice.

de sér entendído,] *d'essere inteso,*] *intellectu*] To be vnderstood.

Participle

Participle of the active voice and present Tense.

el que entiénde,] *intendente*] *intelligens,*] **Understanding.**

Participle of the Preter tense and passiue voice.

entendído,] *inteſo*] *intellectus*] **Understood.**

All Verbes whose Infinitiues end in er, are in all points declined like this, except the irregular in er following.

An Example of the third and last Coniugation of Regular verbs *in* Ir *or* Yr, *as* ABRIR, *in Italian Aprire, Latine Aperire, to* Open, Oyr, Italian *Vdire*, Latine *Audire*, to Heare.

3. *and last coniugation of Verbes Regular in* Ir, *or* Yr.

Indicatiue moode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	O'YO, y O Y'GO, óyes, óye. **Plur.** oýmos, oýs, óyen.	*ODO*, *odi*, *ode*. **Plur.** *vdiamo*, *vdite*, *odono*.	*Audio, &c.*	I doe heare, &c.
Imperfect.	Oýa, oýas, oýa. oýamos, oýades, oýan.	*Vdiua*, *vdiui*, *vdiua*. *vdiuamo*, *vdiuate*, *vdiuano*.	*Audiebam, &c.*	I did heare, &c.
First Perf.	Oý, oýſte, oyó. oýmos, oýſtes, oyéron.	*Vdi & vdij*, *vdiſti*, *vdi*. *vdimmo*, *vdiſte*, (*ro, vdir.* *vdirono, vdiron, vdi-*	*Audiui, &c.*	I haue heard, &c.
Second Perfect.	He, oz úve, ás, oz uviſte, á, oz úvo. ávemos, oz uvímos, avéys, oz uvíſtes, án, oz uviéron, Oýdo.	*Ho*, *hai*, *ha*, *habbiámo*, *haueto*, *hánno*. *Vdito.*	*Audiui, &c.*	I haue heard, &c.
Pluperfect.	avía, avías, avía, avíamos, avíades, avían. Oýdo.	*haueua*, *haueui*, *haueua*, *haueuámo*, *haueuáte*, *haueuano*, *Vdito.*	*Audiueram, &c.*	I had heard.
future.	oyré, oyrás, oyrá, oyrémos, oyréys, oyrán,	*vdiró*, *vdirai*, *vdirá*, *vdirémo*, *vdirete*, *vdiranno*,	*Audiam, &c.*	I shall oz will heare, &c.

Imperatiue moode.

Impe-ratiue moode.	Oýe tu, oy'ga, oz óya aquél, oyámos noſotros, oy'd voſótros, oy'an, oz óygan aquellos,	*odi tu*, *óda colui*, *vdiámo noi*, *vdite voi*, *ódano coloro*,	*audi, audito*, *audiat, audito*, *&c.*	Heare thou, Heare he oz let him heare, &c.

The

OYR *declined.*

The Third and laſt Coniugation of verbes Regular in IR, *and* YR.

Subiunctiue mode

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latine.
Preſ. Como	O'Y A, or óyga, óyas, or óygas, óya, or óyga, oyámos, or oygámos, oyáys, or oygáys, óyan, or óygan.	O'D A, ódi, óda. Quando vdiámo, vdiáte, ódano.	Audiam, &c. when I heare. Cum
Imperfect. Como	Oyéra, oyería, oyéſſe, oyéras, oyerías, oyéſſes, oyéra, oyería, oyéſſe. oyéramos, oyríamos, oyéſſemos, oyérades, oyríades, oyéſſedes, oyéran, oyrían, oyéſſen.	Vdíſſi, vdirèi, vdería, vdiſſi, vdiréſti, vdiſſe, vdirebbe, vdiría. Quando vdíſſimo, vdirémo, vdíſte, vdiréſte, vdiſſero, vdirébbono, vdirían.	Audirem, &c. when I did heare, &c. Cum
Perfect. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayay's, áyan, } Oy'do.	Hábbia, habbi. habbia. habbiámo, habbiáte, habbiano. } Vdito. Cum Quando	Audiuerim, &c. when I haue heard, &c.
Plupe. Como	Uviéra, or uviéſſe, uviéras, or uviéſſes, uviéra, or uviéſſe, uviéramos, or uviéſſemos, uviérades, or uviéſſedes, uviéran, or uviéſſen, } oy'do.	Haueſſi, haueréi, hauería, haueſſi, haueréſti, haueſſe, haurebbe, hauría, haueſſimo, haueréme. haueſte, haueréſte, haueſſero, haurebbono, haurían. } vdito. Quando	Audiuiſſem &c. when I had heard, &c. Cum
First Futur. Como	Oyére, oyéres, oyére, oyéremos, oyéredes, oyéren.	Audiuero, &c. when I ſhall heare, &c. Cum	
Second Future Como	Uviére, or auré, uviéres, or aurás, uviére, or aurá, uviéremos, or aurémos, uviéredes, or auréys, uviéren, or aurán, } oy'do.	Haueró, haueraí, haueráa, haueréme, haueréte, haueránno, } vdito. Quando	Audiuero, &c. when I ſhall heare. Cum

Infinitiue mode Preſent tenſe.

O Y'R,] *Vdire,*] *Audire,*] to Heare.

Preterperfect tenſe.

avér Oy'do *hauer Vdito,*] *Audiuiſſe,*] to haue Heard.

The Future tenſe.

avér de Oy'r, *douer Vdire, hauer ad Vdire, eſſer per Vdire.* } *Auditum eſſe,*] to Heare hereafter.

Gerund

Gerund.

Oyéndo,] *Odendo*,] *Audiendo*,] in Hearing.

Supine of the Actiue voice.

a Oýr,] *Vdire*,] *Auditum*,] to Heare.

Supine of the Passiue voice.

de ser Oýdo,] *a' essere Vdito*,] *Auditu*,] to be Heard.

Participle of the Actiue voice and Present tense.

el que Oye,] *chi Ode*,] *Audiens*,] Hearing.

Participle of the Passiue voice and Preter tense.

Oýdo,] *Vdito*,] *Auditus*,] Heard.

All verbes whose Infinitiues end in ir, or yr, are declined in euery respect like this: except those in ir and yr, in the Irregulars following.

Of Verbes Passiues.

The Spaniards, as the Italian and French, decline their Verbes passiues with their Verbe *Sum, es, fui*, and the Participle of the Preter tense, as of Revelar, to reueale: soy revelado, I am reuealed.

The Spanish formeth the Participle Passiue of the first and third Coniugation of their Infinitiue mood, by taking away r, and putting to do, as of Revelar, Revelado, Pedir, to require, Pedido, required, Oýr, to heare, Oýdo, heard.

But in the second Coniugation they take away r as before, and change the last e into y or i, and adde to do as afore said, as Leer, to read, Leýdo: Entender, to vnderstand, Entendido.

A Verbe Passiue thus declined.

: ser revelado :

Indicatiue mood.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pref.	YO SOY, tu éres, aquél és, } Revelado.		IO SO'No, tu sei, colui é, } Riuelito.		*Reuelor, Reuelaris, &c.*	I am Reuealed. thou art Reuealed.
	Plu.		Plu.			
	Sómos, sóys, són, } Revelados.		*Siámo, sete, sono,* } Rivelati.			
Imperfect.	E'ra, éras, éra, } Revelado.		*E'ra, éri, éra,* } Rivelito.		*Reuelabar, Reuelabaris, &c.*	I was Reuealed, thou wast Reuealed, &c.
	éramos, érades, éran, } Revelados.		*erámo, & eravamo, erate, erano,* } Riveláti.			
First Perf.	Fúy, fuéste, fue, } Revelado.		*Fui, fósti, fu,* } Rivelito.		*Reuelatus sum vel fui, &c.*	I haue beene Reuealed, &c.
	fuymos, fuístes, fuéron, } Revelados.		*fúmo, fóste, fúrono, fúro, fúron* } Riveláti.			
Second perfect.	HE, or úve, as, or uvíste, a, or úvo, } Revelado.	Sído, Sído, Sído,	*Sono, sei, e,* } Rivelito.	*Stato, Stato, Stato,*	*Reuelatus sum vel fui, idem vt antea, &c.*	I haue beene Reuealed, &c.
	Hémos, or uvímos, avéis, or uvístes, an, or uviéron, } Revelados.	Sído, Sído, Sído,	*Siámo, sete, son* } Rivelati.	*Stati Stati Stati*		

Plu-perfect.	Avía Sído, avías Sído, avía Sído, } Reveládo.	E'ra Stato, eri Stato, éra Stato, } Riueláto.	Reuelatus eram vel fuerám, &c.	I had beene Reuealed, &c.
	avíamos Sído, avíades Sído, avían Sído, } Reveládos.	eramo Stati, erauáte Stati, erano Stati, } Riuelati.		
future.	Seré, serás, será, } Reveládo.	Saró, sarái, sará, } Riuelato.	Reuelabor, &c.	I shall or will be Reuealed.
	Serémos, seréys, serán, } Reveládos.	Sarémo, sarete, saranno, } Riuelati.		

Imperatiue mod.

Sé tu, sea aquél, } Reveládo.	Sia, & sij tu, sia, & sie colui, } Riuelato.	Reuelare, Reueletur, &c.	be thou Reuealed, let him be Reuealed, &c.
Seámos, séd, Séan, } Reveládos.	siámo, siate, siano, } Riuelati.		

Subiunctiue mod.

	Spanish.	Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	yo Séa, tu séas, aquel séa } Reveládo.	Io Sia, tu sij, sia, colui sia, sie } Riuelato.	Quando Cum	Reuelar, &c	when I am Reuealed, &c.
	Seámos, seáys, séan } Reveládos.	siámo, siáte, siano & sieno } Riuelati.			
Impers. Como	Fuéra, sería, fuésse, fuéras, serías, fuésses, fuéra, sería, fuésse } Reveládo.	Fóssi, fússi, saréi, saria, fósti, fusti, saresti, fósse, fusse, sarebbe, saria } Riuelato.	Quando Cum	Reuelarer, &c.	when I was Reuealed, &c.
	Fuéramos, seríamos, fuéssemos, fuérades, seríades, fuéssedes, fuéran, serían, fuéssen } Reveládos.	fóssimo, fussimo, sarémmo, foste, fuste, sareste, fossero, fussero, sarebbono, (sariano } Riuelati.			
Perf. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya Sído } Reuelád.	Sia, sij & sia, sia & sie Stato } Riuelato.	Quando Cum	Reuelatus sim vel fuerim, &c.	When I haue beene Reuealed, &c.
	ayámos, ayáys, áyan Sído } Revelád.	siámo, siate, siano stati } Riuelati.			
Plus-perf. Como	Uviéra or uviésse, uviéras or uviésses, uviéra or uviésse Sído } Reveládo.	Fóssi, fússi, saréi, saria, fósti, fusti, saresti, fósse, fusse, sarebbe stato } Riuelato.	Quando Cum	Reuelatus essem vel fuissem, &c.	When I had beene Reuealed, &c.
	uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen Sído } Reveládos.	fóssimo, fussimo, sarémo, foste, fuste, sareste, fossero, fussero, sarebbono, (sariano stati } Riuelati.			
future. Como	Fuére or uviére or avré, fuéres or uviéres or avras, fuére or uviére or avra Sído } Reveládo.	Saró, sarái, sará stato } Riuelato.	Quando Cum	Reuelatus ero vel fuero, &c.	When I shal bee Reuealed, &c.
	fuéremos or uviéremos or avrémos, fuéredes or uviéredes or avréys, fuéren or uviéren or avrán Sído } Reveládos.	sarémo, sarete, saranno stati } Riuelati.			

Infinitiue

Infinitiue mode Present tense.

Ser Reveládo,] *Riuelarsi, essere Riuelato,*] *Reuelari,*] to be Reuealed.

Preter tense.

Avér Sido Reveládo,] *Essere stato Riuelato,*] *Reuelatum esse vel fuisse,*] to haue been Reuealed.

Future tense.

Avér de sér Reueládo. { *Douer essere Riuelato, hauer ad essere Riuelato* } { *Reuelatum iri vel Reuelandum esse,* } to be Reuealed hereafter.

Participle of the Present tense.

Lo que es Reveládo,] *Riuelato,*] *Reuelatus,*] that which is Reuealed.

Participle of the future tense.

Lo que ha de ser Reveládo, { *Hauendo ad essere Riuelato, hauendo a Riuelarsi,* } { *Reuelandus,* } to be Reuealed hereafter.

After this manner in euery respect all other verbes Passiues, Regular or Irregular of what Coniugation soeuer, are to be declined as of the second Coniugation, Soy Vendido, Posseydo, Defendido, and of the third Coniugation, as Soy Oydo, Corregido, Seguido, and so of the rest.

Note that this accusatiue case Se of the Pronoune ioyned with the third Person of verbes Actiues, make them haue the Passiue signification, as Dize, he saith, Se dize, it is said. *Nota.*

Now will I handle and intreat of the verbes Irregular (in which is found hardnes and difficultie to the learner for their declining) in such order and manner that he may with his ease or very little paine decline any of them whatsoeuer: for which purpose and for whose ease and profit, I haue to my great labour brought them into the forme as followeth, and haue so diligently searched, that no one of them needfull to his vse (as I hope) shall be wanting, not here following set downe, that my labours may be answerable to my desire, and the learners profit to my paines.

The first Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in A R, as D A R, *in Italian and Latine Dare,* to Giue.

1. Coniug. of Verbes Irregular in A R.

The verbes Irregular like as the Regular diuided into three Coniugations, the first in ar, the second in er, the third in ir or yr.

The verbes Irregular differ from the Regular afore going in the first Preterperfect of the Indicatiue, and Preterimperfect of the Subiunctiue, as by the examples following you may see. *Nota.*

DAR

Indicatiue mood.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	yo D O Y, tu Dás, aquel Da. **Plur.** Dámos, Dáys, Dán.	*Io D O,* *tu Dái,* *colui Da.* **Plur.** *Diámo or Dámo,* *Date,* *Dánno.*	*Do,* *Das,* *Dat, &c.*	I dóe giue, &c.
Imperf.	Dáva, Dávas, Dáva. Dávamos, Dávades, Dávan.	*Dáua,* *Daui,* *Dáua.* *Dauamo,* *Dauáte,* *Dáuano.*	*Dabam, &c.*	I did giue, &c.
First Perfect.	Dí, Díste, Dió. Dímos, Dístes, Diéron.	*Diedi & Dei,* *Désti.* *Diede & Dette,* *Démmo,* *Deste* *Diédero.*	*Dedi, &c.*	I haue Giuen, &c.

second perfect.	yo He	Dádo.	Ho	Dato,	Dedi, &c. vt supra.	I haue Giuen, &c. as next aboue.
	tu ás		hai			
	aquel á		ha			
	hémos		habbiámo			
	avey's		hauete			
	án		hánno			
Pluper.	Avía,	Dádo,	Haueua	Dato.	Dederam, &c.	I had Giuen, &c.
	Avías,		haueui			
	Avía,		haueua			
	Avíamos,		haueuámo			
	Avíades,		haueuáte			
	Avían,		haueuano			
Futur.	Daré,		Daró,		Dabo, &c.	I shall or will Giue, &c.
	Darás,		Darái,			
	Dará.		Dará,			
	Darémos,		Daréme,			
	Daréys,		Darete,			
	Darán.		Dáranno.			

Imperatiue mod.

Dá tu,	Da tu,	Da dato,	Giue thou, &c.
Dé aquél.	Dia colui.	Det dato, &c.	
Démos,	Diámo,		
Dád,	Date,		
Dén.	Diáno.		

Subiunctiue mod.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Perf. Como	YO De,	Quando	IO Dia,	Cum	Dem, &c.	when I doe giue, &c.
	tu des,		tu dia,			
	aquel De,		colui dia.			
	démos,		diámo,			
	déys,		diáte,			
	dén,		diano,			
Imper. Como	diéra, daría, diésse,	Quando	déssi, daréi, daría,	Cum	Darem, &c.	When I did giue, &c.
	diéras, darías, diésses,		déssi, daresti,			
	diéra, daría, diésse,		desse, darebbe, daria,			
	diéramos, daríamos, diéssemos,		déssimo, darémmo,			
	diérades, daríades, diéssedes,		déste, daréste,			
	diéran, darían, diéssen.		dessero, darébbono, dariano,			
Perf. Como	áya,	Quando	hábbia,	Cum	Dederim, &c.	when I haue giuen, &c.
	áyas,		hábbi,			
	áya,		hábbia,			
	ayámos,		habbiámo,			
	ayáys,		habbiáte,			
	áyan,		hábbiano.			

Dádo. Dato.

Plupert.

Pluperfect. Como	uviéra, or uviésse, uviéros, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen,	Dádo	*Quando* *hauessi, haurei, hauesti, haueresti, hauésse, hauerebbe, hauéssimo, hauerémmo, haueste, haueréste, hauéssero, hauerébbono,*	*Cum* *Didissem, &c.* Dáto.	When I had giuen, &c.
Future. Como	Diére, Diéres, Diére, Diéremos, Diéredes, Diéren.	*Quando*	*haueró, hauerái, hauerá, hauerémo, hauerete, haueránno,*	*Cum* *Dedero, &c.* Dato.	When I shal giue, &c.

Infinitiue mood Present tense.

DA'R,] *Dare,*] *Dare,*] To giue.

Preterperfect tense.

avér Dádo, { *hauer dato, douer dare, hauer a dare.* } *Dedisse.* { To haue giuen.

Gerund.

Dando,] *dando,*] *dando,*] In giuing.

Participle of the Present tense, and Actiue voice.

El que da,] *Dante,*] *Dans,*] giuing.

Participle of the Preter tense and Passiue voice.

Dado,] *Dato,*] *Datus*] giuen.

Participle of the Future tense.

El que há, or espéra de dár] *Essere per dare*] *Daturum esse*] to giue hereafter.

These here vnder written only differ from the Regular verbes in the first Preterperfect tense of their Indicatiue mood, which alway change Car of the Infinitiue into qué, and gar into gue, as

Infinitiues.	Pres.	Preterperfects.
Acercár, to come neere,	yo Acérco,	Acerqué.
Cercár, to compasse,	yo Cérco,	Cerqué.
Cargár, to charge, to burden,	yo Cárgo,	Cargué.
Achicár, to make little,	yo Achíco,	Achiqué.
Ahogár, to choake, to drowne.	yo Ahógo,	Ahogué.
Allegár, to come neere.	yo Allégo,	Allegué.
Ahorcár, to hang vp,	yo Ahórco,	Ahorqué.
Anegár, to drowne,	yo Anégo,	Anegué.
Arrancár, to plucke vp,	yo Arránco,	Arranqué.
Arremangár, to tucke vp,	yo Arremángo,	Arremangué.
Arriscár, to endanger,	yo Arrísco,	Arrisqué.
Apesgár, to weigh downe,	yo Apésgo,	Apesgué.
Assulcár, to furrow,	yo Asúlco,	Asulqué.
Bogár, to rowe,	yo Bógo,	Bogué.
Bolcár, to tumble downe,	yo Bólco,	Bolqué.
Castigár, to chastise,	yo Castígo,	Castigué.
Calcár, to kicke vnder feet,	yo Cálco,	Calqué.
Colgár, to hang,	yo Cuélgo,	Colqué.
Cocár, to gape at, to mocke,	yo Cuéco,	Coqué.
Cavalgár, to ride,	yo Caválgo,	Cavalgué.
Chocár, to sucke,	yo Chuéco,	Choqué.
Denegár, to deny,	yo Deniégo,	Denegué.
Derrocár, to throw downe,	yo Derruéco,	Derrogué.
Descolgár, to vnhang,	yo Descuélgo,	Descolgué.
Desfogár, to coole,	yo Desfuégo,	Desfogué.

Infinitiues.	Pzes.	Pzeterperfects.
Embarcár, to embarke,	yo Embárco,	Embarqué.
Desligár, to vntie,	yo Desligo,	Desligué.
Embaucár, to cast into a hole,	yo Embáuco,	Embauqué.
Embocár, to,	yo Embóco,	Emboqué.
Desnegár, to recant,	yo Desniégo,	Desnegué.
Enarcár, to chest vp,	yo Enárco,	Enarqué.
Divulgár, to publish,	yo Divúlgo,	Divulgué.
Empegár, to pitch,	yo Empiégo,	Empegué.
Fabricár, to frame,	yo Fabrico,	Fabriqué.
Encenegár, to dirt,	yo Encienégo,	Encenegué.
Fregár, to rub,	yo Friégo,	Fregué.
Holgár, to be glad,	yo Huélgo,	Holgué.
Mancár, to want,	yo Mánco,	Manqué.
Jugár, to play,	yo Juégo,	Jugué.
Marcár, to marke,	yo Márco,	Marqué.
Mercár, to buy,	yo Miérco,	Merqué.
Mascár, to chew,	yo Másco,	Masqué.
Mendigár, to beg,	yo Mendígo,	Mendigué.
Navegár, to saile,	yo Navégo,	Navegué.
Otorgár, to grant,	yo Otórgo,	Otorgué.
Pelíscár, to pinch,	yo Pelísco,	Pelísqué.
Pagár, to pay,	yo Págo,	Pagué.
Pescár, to fish,	yo Pésco,	Pesqué.
Plegár, to fold.	yo Pliégo,	Pliegué.
Regár, to water,	yo Riégo,	Regué.

These here aboue and their like in all other Tenses varie nothing from the verbes regular in ar afoze going, as Juzgár, to iudge, the Indicatiue pzesent Tense, Júzgo, I iudge, Pzeterimperfect, Juzgáva, first Pzeterperfect, Jusgué, the second Perfect, He Juzgádo, the Pzeterpluperfect, avía Juzgádo, Future, Juzgaré. Imperatiue, Juzga. The Pzesent Tense of the Optatiue and Subiunctiue, Oxalá oz Si Juzgue, the Pzeterimperfect Tense, Juzgára, juzgaría, juzgásse, Perfect, áya juzgádo, Pluperfect, uviéra oz uviésse Juzgádo, Future, Juzgáre. Infinitiue, Juzgár. Participle, Juzgádo.

ESTAR *Of Verbes Irregular the first Coniugation in* AR, *as* Estár,] *in* Italian *Essere,*] in Latine *Esse,*] To be, to stand. *Stare*

Indicatiue mood.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pzes.	YO ESTO'Y,	*IO STO,*	*Sto, &c.*	I stand, oz I am, &c.
	tu estás,	*tu stái,*		
	aquel está,	*colui sta,*		
	estámos,	*stámo,*		
	estáys,	*státe,*		
	están.	*stánno.*		
Imperfect.	estáva,	*stáua,*	*Stabam, &c.*	I was, oz did stand, &c.
	estávas,	*stáui,*		
	estáva,	*stáua,*		
	estávamos,	*stauámo,*		
	estávades,	*stauáto,*		
	estávan.	*stáuano.*		
First Perfect.	estúve,	*stetti, & stei,*	*steti, &c.*	I haue beene, oz haue stood, &c.
	estuvíste,	*stésti,*		
	estúvo,	*stette,*		
	estuvímos,	*stémo,*		
	estuvístes,	*stéste,*		
	estuviéron.	*stéttero.*		

Second

Second Perfect.	yo Hé,	Eſtádo.	ſóno,	Stato. ſteti, &c. vi ſupra.	I haue bœn, or haue ſtood, &c.
	tu ás,		ſéi,		
	aquel há,		é,		
	hémos,		ſiámo,	Stati.	
	avéys,		ſéte,		
	áu,		ſóno,		
Pluperfect.	avía,	Eſtádo.	éra.	Stato. ſteteram, &c.	I had bœne, or had ſtood, &c.
	avías,		éri,		
	avía,		éra,		
	avíamos,		eraváme,	Stati.	
	avíades,		eravate,		
	avían,		érano,		
Future.	Eſtaré,		ſtaró,	Stabo, &c.	I ſhal or will ſtand or be, &c.
	eſtarás,		ſtarái,		
	eſtará,		ſtará,		
	eſtarémos,		ſtaréme,		
	eſtaréys,		ſtaréte,		
	eſtarán.		ſtaránno.		

Imperatiue mood.

Imperatiue mood.	Eſtá, ſta,		ſtá,	ſta, ſtato, &c.	bee thou, or ſtand thou, &c.
	eſté,		ſtia,		
	eſtémos,		ſtiámo.		
	eſtád,		ſtáte,		
	eſtén.		ſtiano,		

Subiunctiue mode.

	Spaniſh.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pret. Como	Eſté,	Quando	Stia,	Cum	Stem, &c.	when I am or ſtãd, &c.
	Eſtés,		Stij,			
	Eſté,		Stia,			
	Eſtémos,		Stiámo,			
	Eſtéys,		Stiáte,			
	Eſtén.		Stiano,			
Imperfect. Como	Eſtuviéra, eſtaría, eſtuviéſſe,	Quando	Starei, ſtéſſi, ſtaría,	Cum	Starem, &c.	when I ſtood or was, &c.
	Eſtuviéras, eſtarías, eſtuviéſſes,		Staréſti, ſteſſi,			
	Eſtuviéra, eſtaría, eſtuvieſſe,		Starebbe, ſteſſe, ſtaría,			
	Eſtuviéramos, eſtaríamos, eſtuviéſſemos,		Staréme, ſtéſſimo,			
	Eſtuviérades, eſtaríades, eſtuviéſſedes,		Staréſte, ſteſte,			
	Eſtuviéran, eſtarían, eſtuviéſſen.		ſtarébbono, ſtariano, ſtéſſero.			
Perf. Como	A'ya,	eſtádo. Quando	Sia,	Cum	Steterim, &c.	when I haue ſtood or bœn, &c.
	áyas,		Sij,			
	áya,		Sia,			
	Ayámos,		Siáme,			
	Ayáys,		Siáte			
	áyan,		Siáno,			

uviéra,

Pluper. Como	uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviessedes, uviéran, or uviéssen,	estádo.	Quando	Fossi, Fossi, Fosse, Fóssimo, Fóste, Fóssero.	Státo. Stati.	Cum stetissem, &c. When I had bœne, or stood, &c.
First Future. Como	Estuviére, Estuviéres, Estuviére, Estuviéremos, Estuviéredes, Estuviéren,		Quando	Saró, Sarái, Sará, Sarémo, Saréte, Saránno	Státo. Stati.	Cum Stetero, &c. When I shal or wil stand or be, &c.
Second Future. Como	uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá. uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán,	Estádo.		Saró, Sarái, Sará. Sarémo, Saréte, Saránno,	Státo. Státi.	Cum Stetero, &c. When I shal or wil be or stand &c.

Infinitiue mood Present tense.

Estár,]	*Stare,*]	*Stare,*]	to stand or be.

Preterperfect tense.

avér Estádo,]	*hauer Státo,*]	*Stetisse,*]	to haue stood or bœne.

Future tense.

avér or esperár d'estár,	*douer Stare, esser per Stare,*	*Staturum esse,*	to stand hereafter.

Gerund.

Estándo,]	*Stando,*]	*Stando,*]	In standing or being.

Participle.

Estádo,]	*Stato,*]	*Status,* [	Stood or bœne.

These Verbes following make their Present tense of the Indicatiue, by changing the last sillable saue one of the Infinitiue, the e into ie, and the o into ve, as

Infinitiue.	Pres.	Preterperfect.
Assentár, to sit, to set,	yo assiénto,	Assenté.
Approvár, to allow,	yo appruévo,	Aprové.
Sentár, to sit,	yo siénto,	Senté.
Sonár, to sound,	yo suéno,	Soné.
Conservár, to kœpe,	yo consiérvo,	Conservé.
Atronár, to thunder,	yo atruéno,	Attroné.
Cegár, to make blinde,	yo ciégo,	Ciegué.
Contár, to reckon,	yo cuénto,	Conté.
Cerrár, to shut, to locke,	yo ciérro,	Cerré.
Degollár, to kill, to behead,	yo deguéllo,	Degollé.
Enterrár, to put in the earth,	yo entiérro,	Enterré.
Derrocár, to throw downe,	yo deruéco,	Derroqué.
Colgár, to hang.	yo cuélgo,	Colgué.
Desterrár, to banish,	yo destiérro,	Desterré.
Dessollár, to paunch,	yo desuéllo,	Desollé.
Hollár, to tread on,	yo huéllo,	Hollé.
Entesár, to bend,	yo entiéso,	Entesé.
Segár, to cut,	yo siégo,	Sequé.
Resollár, to breath,	yo resuéllo,	Resollé.
Resolgár, *idem,*	yo resuélgo,	Resolgué.
Temblár, to tremble,	yo trémblo,	Temblé.
Tentár, to assay,	yo tiénto,	Tenté.
Tropeçár, to stumble,	yo tropiéço,	Tropecé.
Adereçár, to make readie.	yo aderésco,	Aderescé.

Of

Of Verbes Irregular of the first Coniugation in AR, *as* ANDAR, ANDAR.
In Italian, *Andare*, in Latine, *Ire, Gradi*, to Goe.

Indicatiue mood.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	A'ndo, ándas, ánda,	*Vo, & Vado,* *Vai,* *Va,*	*Eo,* *is, &c.*	I Goe, thou Goest, &c
	Andámos, andáys, ándan.	*Andiámo,* *Andáte,* *Vánno.*		
Imperfect.	Andáva, Andávas, Andáva,	*Andiua,* *Andaui,* *Andáua,*	*Iham, &c.*	I did goe, &c.
	Andávamos, Andávades, Andávan.	*Andauámo,* *Andauáte,* *Andauano.*		
First Perf.	Andúve, Anduviſte, Andúvo,	*Andái,* *Andásti,* *Andò,*	*Iuie, &c.*	I haue Gone, &c.
	Anduvímos, Anduvíſtes, Anduviéron.	*Andámmo,* *Andaſte,* *Andarono.*		
Second Perfect.	He, as, a, Hémos, avéys, án,	Andádo. *Sono, Sei, é,* *Andáto.* *Siámo, Séte, Sono,* *Andati.*	*Iui, &c.* *vt ſuprà.*	I haue Gone, &c, as before.
Pluperfect.	Avía, Avías, Avía, Avíamos, Avíades, Avían,	Andádo. *E'ra, éri, éva,* *Andato.* *Erauámo, eraudte, érano.* *Andati.*	*Iueram, &c.*	I had Gone, &c.
future.	Andaré, Andarás, Andará, Andarémos, Andaréys, Andarán.	*Anderó, andró,* *Anderái, andrai,* *Andera, andrá,* *Anderémo, andrémo,* *Anderete, Andréte,* *Anderánno, andránno.*	*Ibo, &c.*	I shall or will goe, &c.

Imperatiue mood.

A'nda tu, ánde aquel, Andémos, Andád, ánden.	*Va tu,* *Vada, or vada colui,* *Andiámo,* *Andáte,* *Vádano, or vádino.*	*Ito, &c.*	Goe thou, &c.

of

ANDAR. *Of Verbes Irregular the first Coniugation in* AR.

Subiunctiue mood.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pzet. Como	ánde, ándes, ánde,	Quando	vada, vádi, vada, vadi, vãda, vadi,	Eam, &c	When I do goe, &c.	
	andémos, andéys, ánden.		andiámo, andiate, vádano, vádino.			
Imper. Como	anduviéra, andaría, anduviésse, anduviéras, andarías, anduviésses, anduviéra, andaría, anduviésse,	Quando	andassi, andarei, anderia, andessi, anderésti, andásse, anderébbe, anderia.	Cum	iuem, &c.	When I did go, &c.
	Anduviéramos, andaríamos, anduviéssemos, anduviérades, andaríades, anduviéssedes, anduviéran, andarían, anduviéssen.		andássimo, anderémo, andáste, anderéste, andássero, anderébbero, anderiano.			
Perf. Como	áya, áyas, áya, ándado.	Quando	fia, fii, fia,	Andato.	iuerim, &c.	When I hane gone, &c.
	áyamos, aya ys, áyan,		fiamo, siate, fiáno,	Andati.		
Pluper. Como.	uviéra, oz uviésses, uviéra, oz uviésses, uviéra, oz uviésse, ándado.	Quando	fóssi, sarei, fossi, sarésti, fosse, sarébbe,	Andato.	iuissem, &c.	When I had gone &c.
	uviéramos, oz uviéssemos, uviérades, oz uviéssedes, uviéran, oz uviéssen,		fóssimo, saremmo, fóste, sareste, fossero, sarebbero.	Andati.		
future. Como.	anduviére, anduviéres, anduviére,	Quando	saró, sarái, sará,	Andato.	iuero, &c.	When I shal oz will go hereafter, &c.
	anduviéremos, anduviéredes, anduviéren.		saremo, sareste, saranno.	Andati.		

Infinitiue mood, Pzesent tense.

ANDA'R,] *Andare,*] *Ire,*] to goe.

Pzeterperfect tense.

Avér andádo,] *Essere andato,*] *Iuisse,*] to haue gone.

Future tense.

Avér oz esperár de andár, { *Esser per andare, Douer andare, Hauer ad andare.* } *Itumm esse,* { to goe, oz about to goe.

Gerund.

Andándo,] *Andándo,*] *Eundo,*] in going.

Participle of the Pzesent tense and Actiue voice.

El que ánda,] *Andánte,*] *Euns,*] one going.

Participle of the Pzeter and Passiue voice.

Andádo,] *Andato,*] gone.

of

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, *as* Traér, Sabér, Tenér, Podér, Querér, Ponér, Hazér, Cabér. TRAER.

Indicatiue mood.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.
Pzel.	yo TRA'YGO,	*io APPORTO,*	*Adduco, &c* I fetch or bring, &c.
	tu tráes,	*tu appórti,*	
	aquel tráe,	*colui appórta,*	
	traémos,	*apportiámo,*	
	tracys,	*apportáte,*	
	tráen.	*apportano.*	
Imper.	Tray'a,	*apportáua,*	*Adducebam &c.* I did fetch or bring, &c.
	tray'as,	*apportáui,*	
	tray'a,	*apportáua,*	
	tray'amos,	*apportauamo,*	
	tray'ades,	*apportauáte,*	
	tray'an,	*apportáuano.*	
First Perf.	trúxe, or tráxe,	*apportái,*	*Adduxi, &c* I haue fetcht or brought, &c.
	truxíste, or traxíste,	*apportáfte,*	
	trúxo, or tráxo,	*apportò,*	
	truxímos, or traxímos,	*apportammo,*	
	truxíftes, or traxíftes,	*apportáfte,*	
	truxéron, or traxéron,	*apportáron, apportáro, apportár.*	
Second perfect.	hé, as, &c. tray'do.	*ho, hai, &c. apportáto.*	*Adduxi, &c* I haue fetcht or brought, &c.
Pluperf.	avía, avías, &c. tray'do.	*hauéua, hauéui, &c. Apportáto.*	*Adduxeram, &c.* I had fetcht or brought, &c.
Futur.	traeré,	*apportaró,*	*Adducam, &c.* I shall or will fetch or bring, &c
	traerás,	*apportarái,*	
	traerá,	*apportará,*	
	traerémos,	*apportaréme,*	
	traeréys,	*apportaréte*	
	traerán,	*apportarán̄o.*	

Imperatiue mood.

Impe-ratiue mood.	Tráe tu, tráyga aquel.	*Apporta tu, apporti colui,*	*Adduc, ad-ducito,* Bring or fetch thou, &c.
	traémos,	*apportáme,*	
	traéd,	*apportáte,*	
	tráygan,	*apportino,*	

of

TRAER *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in* ER, *as* TRAER, *in Italian Apportare, Arrecare, Trahere, Addurere, Menare,* in Latine *Adducere, Afferre, Trahere,* to Fetch, to Bring, to Carry to Draw.

Subiunctiue mood.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	Tráyga or Tráya, Tráygas or Tráyas, &c. Tráyga, or Tráya, Traygámos, Traygáys, Tráygan.	Quando	*Apporti,* *Apporti,* *Apporti,* *Apportiámo,* *Apportiáte,* *Appórtino.*	Cum	*Adducam, &c.*	When I doe fetch, or bring, &c.
Imperf. Como	Truxéra, Traería, Truxésse, Truxéras, Traerías, Truxésses, Truxéra, Traería, Truxésse. Truxéramos, Traeríamos, Truxéssemos Truxérades, Traeríades, Truxéssedes, Truxéran, Traerían, Truxéssen.	Quando	*Apportaréi* or *Apportássi,* *Aportarésti* or *Apportássi,* *Apportarebbe* or *Apportasse.* *Apportarémmo* or *Aportássimo* *Apportareste* or *Apportáste,* *Apportarébbono* or *Apportássero*	Cum	*Adducerem, &c.*	When I did fetch or bring, &c.

you shal finde in some authors Traxésse, Traxésses, &c.

perfect. Como	áya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan,	Traydo.	Quando	*Habbia,* *Habbi,* *Hábbia,* *Habbiámo,* *Habbiáte,* *Hábbiano,*	*Apportato.* Cum	*Adduxerim, &c.*	When I haue fetched or brought, &c.
Pluperf. Como	uviéra or uviésse, uviéras or uviésses, uviéra or uviésse, uviéramos or uviéssemos, uviérades or uviéssedes, uviéran or uviéssen,	Traydo.	Quando	*Hauerei* or *Hauéssi,* *Hauerésti* or *Hauéssi,* *Hauerébbe* or *Hauesse,* *Hauerémmo* or *Hauéssimo* *Haueréste* or *Haueste,* *Hauerébbono* or *Hauéssero,*	*Apportáto.* Cum	*Adduxissem, &c.*	When I had brought or fetched, &c.
Future. Como	Truxére, Truxéres, Truxére. Truxéremos, Truxéredes, Truxéren.		Quando	*Haueró* *Hauerái* *Hauerá* *Hauerémo* *Haueréte* *Haueránno*	*Apportáto.* Cum	*Adduxero, &c.*	When I shall bring or fetch, &c.

Infinitiue moode Present tense.

TRAE'R] *Apportare*] *Adducere,*] to Bring, to Fetch.

Preterperfect tense.

Avér Traydo,] *Hauer Apportato,*] *Adduxisse,*] to haue brought.

Future tense.

Avér or Esperár de traér, { *Douer Apportare,* / *Hauer ad Apportare,* / *Essere per Apportare.* } *Adducturum esse,*] to bring hereafter.

Gerund.

Trayéndo,] *Apportando,*] *Adducendo,*] in bringing or fetching.

Participle of the Actiue and Present tense.

El que tráe] *Apportante,*] *Adducens,*] one bringing.

Participle of the Passiue and Preter tense.

Traydo] *Apportato,*] *Adductus,*] brought.

Participle of the Future tense.

el que ha or espéra de Traér, { *Douendo Apportare,* / *Essendo per Apportare,* } *Adducturus,* } About to bring or fetch.

These

These Verbes following ending in cer, make their Present tense of the Indicatiue by adding an ſ before c, thus,

Infinitiues.	Pres.	Preter.
Acaecér, to happen,	yo acaéſco,	Acaecý.
Acontecér, *idem*,	yo acontéſco,	Acontecí.
Adoleſcér, to be ſorie or ſicke,	yo adoléſco,	Adoleſcí.
Agradeſcér, to giue thankes,	yo agradéſco,	Agradecý.
Amortecér, to ſwoune,	yo amortéſco,	Amortecí.
Desfallecér, *idem*,	yo desfalléſco,	Desfallecý.
Apetecér, to deſire,	yo apetéſco,	Apetecý.
Crecér, to grow,	yo créſco,	Crecí.
Encallecér, to wax hard as brawne,	yo encalléſco,	Encallecí.
Encarecér, to augment	yo encaréſco,	Encarecí.
Empecér, to hinder,	yo empéſco,	Empecí.
Eſtablecér, to eſtabliſh,	yo eſtabléſco,	Eſtablecí.
Fenecér, to finiſh,	yo fenéſco,	Fenecí.
Pacér, to feed.	yo páſco,	Paci.
Perecér, to periſh,	yo peréſco,	Perecý

Except.

Vencér, to ouercome,	yo vençó,	Vencí.

In all other Words and Tenſes they are declined like the Verbes Regular of the ſecond Conjugation in E R.

Theſe in ger, make their Preſent of the Indicatiue, by changing g into j, which the Spaniards in writing doe much vſe, ſetting downe the one for the other, as well in Nounes as in Verbes, as in Nounes Mageſtád, Majeſtád: Menſáje, Menſage, and the like.

Infinitiues.	Pres.	Preter.
Encogér, to withdraw,	yo encójo,	Encogí.
Recoger, to gather vp or retire	yo recójo,	Recogí.
Acogér, to entertaine,	yo acójo,	Acogý.
Eſcoger, to chooſe out,	yo eſcójo,	Eſcogý.
Cogér, to gather,	yo cójo,	Cogý.
Vngir, to annoint,	yo únjo,	Vngí.

In other Words and Tenſes like the Regulars.

Theſe make their Preſent tenſe of the Indicatiue, by adding i in the laſt ſyllable ſaue one of the Infinitiue, as

Infinitiues.	Pres.	Preter.
Defender, to defend,	yo defiéndo,	Defendí
Dehendér, to cleaue aſunder.	yo dehiéndo,	Dehendí.

And theſe make the Preſent tenſe by turning o in the laſt ſyllable ſaue one of the Infinitiue into ue, as

Infinitiues.	Pres.	Preter.
Bolvér, to turne,	yo buélvo,	Bolví.
Rebolvér, to returne,	yo rebuélvo,	Rebolví.
Solér, to be wont,	yo ſuélo,	Solí.
Coſér, to ſow,	yo cuéſo,	Coſý.
Cozér, to ſœthe,	yo cuézo,	Cozí.
Dolér, to be ſorie, to grieue,	yo duélo,	Dolí.

And theſe following thus,

Caér, to fall,	yo caygo,	Cay.
Roér, to gnaw,	yo róygo,	Roý.
Valér, to be worth,	yo válgo,	Valí.
Traér, to fetch or bring,	yo tráygo,	Trúxe.
Oýr, to heare,	yo óygo,	Oý.

In other Words and Tenſes like the Regular Verbes.

In like manner thorow all Words and Tenſes are his Compounds declined, as Retraér, to withdraw, yo Retráygo, I doe withdraw, Retrúxe, I haue withdrawne, &c.

SABER. *Of Verbes Irregular the ſecond Conjugation in* ER, *as* SABER, in Italian *Sapere*, Latine *Scire*, *Sapere*, to know.

Indicatiue mood.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latine.	
Preſ.	yo SE',	*Io So,*	*Scio, Scis, &c.*	I know,
	tu Sábes,	*tu Sái,*		thou knoweſt, &c.
	aquel Sábe.	*colui Sa.*		
	Sabémos,	*Sappiámo,*		
	Sabéys,	*Sapéte,*		
	Sáben.	*Sánno.*		
Imperfect.	Sabía,	*Sapéua,*	*Sciebam, &c.*	I did know,
	Sabías,	*Sapéui,*		&c.
	Sabía.	*Sapéua.*		
	Sabíamos,	*Sapeuámo,*		
	Sabíades,	*Sapeuate,*		
	Sabían.	*Sapeuano.*		
First Perfect.	Súpe,	*Séppi,*	*Sciui, &c.*	I haue knowne, &c.
	Supíſte,	*Sappeſti,*		
	Súpo.	*Seppe.*		
	Supímos,	*Sappémmo,*		
	Supíſtes,	*Sappeſte,*		
	Supiéron.	*Séppero.*		
Second Perfect.	He	*Ho*	*Sciui, &c. vt ante.*	I haue knowne, &c. as aboue.
	as	*Hai*		
	a	*Ha*		
	Hémos	*Habbiámo*		
	avéys	*Hauete,*		
	án	*Hánno*		
	} Sabído.	}	} *Saputo.*	
Pluperfect.	Avía	*Hauéua*	*Sciueram, &c.*	I had knowne, &c.
	Avías	*Hauéui*		
	Avía	*Hauéua*		
	Avíamos	*Hauéuamo*		
	Avíades	*Hauéuate*		
	Avían	*Hauéuano*		
	} Sabído.	}	} *Saputo.*	
Future.	Sabré,	*Sapprò,*	*Sciam, &c.*	I ſhal or ſhal know, &c.
	Sabrás,	*Sapprái,*		
	Sabrá.	*Sapprá*		
	Sabrémos,	*Sapprémo,*		
	Sabréys,	*Sappréte,*		
	Sabrán.	*Sappránno.*		

Imperatiue mood.

Sábe tu,	*Sappi tu,*	*Sci, Scito, &c.*	Know thou,
Sepa aquel.	*Sappia colui.*		&c.
Sepámos,	*Sappiámo,*		
Sabéd,	*Sappiáte,*		
Sépan.	*Sáppiano.*		

Declining

Declining of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, *as* SABER. SABER.

Subiunctiue moode.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	SE'PA, Sépas, Sépa, Sepámos, Sepáys, Sépan.	Quando	*SAPPIA,* *Sappi,* *Sappia,* *Sappiámo,* *Sappiáte,* *Sáppiano.*	Cum	*Sciam, &c.*	When I doe know, &c.
Imperf. Como	Supiéra, sabría, supiésse, Supiéras, sabrías, supiésses, Supiéra, sabría, supiésse, Supiéramos, sabríamos, supiéssemos, Supiérades, sabríades, supiéssedes, Supiéran, sabrían, supiéssen.	Quando	*Saprei, sapéssi,* *Saprésti, sapéssi,* *Saprebbe, sapésse,* *Saprémo, sapéssimo,* *Sapréste, sapéste,* *Saprebbero, sapéssero,*	Cum	*Scirem, &c.*	When I did know, &c.
Perfect. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya, Ayámos, Ayáys, áyan,	Sabído.	*Quando* *Hábbia,* *Hábbi,* *Habbia,* *Habbiámo,* *Habbiáte,* *Hábbiano,*	*Saputo.*	*Cum* *Sciuerim, &c.*	When I haue knowne, &c.
Pluper. Como	Uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen,	Sabído.	*Quando* *Hauerei, hauéssi,* *Hauerésti, hauésti,* *Hauerébbe, hauésse,* *Hauerémo, hauéssimo,* *Hauerete, hauéste,* *Hauerébbono, hauéssero,*	*Sapúto.*	*Cum* *Sciuissem, &c.*	When I had knowne, &c.
First Future. Como	Supiére, Supiéres, Supiére, Supiéremos, Supiéredes, Supiéren.	Quando	*Hauero,* *Hauerái,* *Hauerá,* *Hauerémo,* *Hauerete,* *Haueránno,*	*Sapúto.*	*Cum* *Sciuero, &c.*	When I shal know, &c.
Second Future. Como	Uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or aurán,	Sabído.	*Quando* *Haueró,* *Hauerái,* *Hauerá,* *Hauerémo,* *Hauerete,* *Haueránno,*	*Sapúto.*	*Cum* *Sciuero, &c. vt antea.*	When I shal know, &c.

Infinitiue mood Present tense.

SABE'R,] *Sapére,*] *Scire,*] to know.

Preterperfect tense.

avér Sabído,] *hauer Sapúto,*] *Sciuisse,*] to haue knowne.

Future tense.

avér or esperar de Sabér, } *Douer sapére,* *Hauer a sapere* *Essere per sapére,* } *Sciturum esse,*] to know hereafter.

Gerund.

Sabiéndo,	*Sapendo,*	*Sciendo,* — in knowing.

Participle of the Present, and Active.

el que Sábe,	*quello chi Sa,*	*Sciens,* — one knowing.

Participle of the Preter tense and Passiue.

Sabído,	*Saputo,*	knowne.

TENER *Declining of Verbes Irregular of the second Coniugation in* ER, *as* TENER, In Italian, and Latine, *Tenére*, to Hold.

Indicatiue mode.

Present.

YO TE'NGO,	*IÓ TE'NGO,*	*Teneo,* &c. — I doe hold, &c.
tu Tiénes,	*tu Tieni,*	
aquél Tiéne,	*colui Tiéne,*	
Tenémos,	*Teniámo,*	
Teneys,	*Tenete,*	
Tiénen.	*Téngono.*	

Imperfect.

Tenía,	*Teneua,* & *tenéa,*	*Teneham,* &c. — I did Hold, &c.
Tenías,	*Teneui,*	
Tenía,	*Teneua,* & *tenéa,*	
Teníamos,	*Teneuámo,*	
Teníades,	*Teneuate,*	
Tenían.	*Tenéuano.*	

First Perfect.

Túve,	*Tenni,*	*Tenui,* &c. — I haue held, &c.
Tuviſte,	*Teneſti,*	
Túvo,	*Tenne,*	
Tuvímos,	*Tennémmo,*	
Tuvíſtes,	*Teneſte,*	
Tuviéron.	*Tennero.*	

Second Perfect.

Yo He,	*Ho,*	*Tenui,* &c. — I haue held, &c. as next aboue.
Tu as,	*Hai,*	
aquel á,	*Ha,*	
Hémos,	*Habbiámo,*	
avéys,	*Hauete,*	
án,	*Hanno.*	

Tenído. — *Tenúto.*

Pluperfect.

Avía,	*Hauéua,*	*Tenneram,* &c. — I had held, &c.
Avías,	*Haueui,*	
Avía,	*Haueua,*	
Avíamos,	*Haueuámo,*	
Avíades,	*Haueuate,*	
Avían,	*Haueuano,*	

Tenído. — *Tenúto.*

Future.

Tendré, or Terné,	*Tenneró,* & *Terró,*	*Tenebo,* &c. — I shal or will hold, &c.
Tendrás, or Ternás,	*Tennerai,* & *Terrái,*	
Tendrá, or Terná,	*Tenerá,* & *Terra,*	
Tendrémos, or Ternémos,	*Tenerémo,* & *Terrémo,*	
Tendréys, or Ternéys,	*Teneréte,* & *Terréſte,*	
Tendrán, or ternán,	*Tenneránno,* & *Terránno,*	

Imperatiue

Imperatiue mood.

Tén tu,	*Tieni tu,*	*Tene tu, &c.*	Hold thou, &c.
Ténga aquél,	*Ténga colui,*		
Tengámos,	*Teniámo,*		
Tened,	*Tenéte,*		
Téngan.	*Téngano.*		

Subiunctiue moode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres. Como	Ténga,	*Tenga,*	*Teneam, &c.*	When I doe hold, &c.
	Téngas,	*Tenghi,*		
	Ténga,	*Tenga,*		
	Tengámos,	*Teniámo,*		
	Tengáys,	*Teniáte,*		
	Téngan.	*Téngano.*		
Imperf. Como	Tuviéra, ternía, tuviésse,	*Tenéssi, tenerei, tenería,*	*Tenerem, &c.*	When I did hold, &c.
	Tuviéras, ternías, tuviésses,	*Tenéssi, tenerésti,*		
	Tuviéra, ternía, tuviésse,	*Tenésse, tenerebbe, tenería,*		
	Tuviéramos, terníamos, tuviéssemos,	*Tenéssimo, tenerémmo,*		
	Tuviérades, terníades, tuviéssedes,	*Teneste, tenereste,*		
	Tuviéran, ternían, tuviéssen.	*Tenessero, tenerébbono,*		
Perfect. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya, Ayámos, Ayáys, áyan, } Tenído.	*Hábbia, Hábbi, Habbia, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hábbiano,* } *Tenúto.*	*Tenuerim, &c.*	When I haue holden, &c.
Pluper. Como	uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen, } Tenído.	*Hauerei, or Hauéssi, Hauerésti, or Hauéssi, Hauerébbe, or Hauésse, Hauerémmo, or Hauéssimo, Hauereste, or Haueste, Hauerébbono, or Hauéssero,* } *Tenúto.*	*Tenuissem, &c.*	When I had holden, &c.
First Future. Como	Tuviére, Tuviéres, Tuviére, Tuviéremos, Tuviéredes, Tuviéren.		*Tenuero, &c.*	When I shal or will hold, &c.
Second Future. Como	uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán, } Tenído.	*Haueró, Hauerai, Hauerá, Hauerémo, Hauerete, Hauerànno,* } *Tenúto.*	*Tenuero, &c. vtantè.*	When I shal or will hold, &c. as next aboue.

Infinitiue mood Present tense.

TENE'R,] *Tenére,*] *Tenere,*] to Hold.

Preterperfect tense.

avér Tenído,] *Hauér Tenúto,*] *Tenuisse,*] to haue Holden.

Future tense.

Avér de Tenér, { *Douér tenére,* / *Hauer a tenere,* / *Essere per tenére,* } *Tenturum esse,*] to Hold hereafter.

Gerund.

Teniéndo,] *Tenéndo,*] *Tenendo,*] In Holding.

Participle of the Present and Actiue.

El que tiéne,] *Tenénte*] *Tenens,*] one Holding.

Participle of the Preter and Passiue.

Tenído,] *Tenúto,*] *Tentus,* Holden.

Like this verbe simple are his Compounds in all points declined thorow all Moods and Tenses, as Mantenér, to maintaine, yo Manténgo, Mantúve. Detenér, to detaine or stay, yo Deténgo, Detúve. Retenér, to withhold or retaine, yo Reténgo, Retúve. Sostenér, to sustaine or vphold, yo Sosténgo, Sustúve.

PODER *the second Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in* ER, *as* PODER, in Italian *Potere,* in Latine *Posse,* to be able.

Indicatiue moode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Present.	yo PUE'DO,	*POSSO,*	*Possum, &c.*	I can or am able, &c.
	tu Puédes,	*Puoi,*		
	aquel Puéde,	*Puo,*		
	Podémos,	*Possiámo,*		
	Podéys,	*Potéte,*		
	Puéden.	*Póssano & Pónno.*		
Imperfect.	Podía,	*Potéua, or Potéa,*	*Poteram, &c.*	I was able, &c.
	Podías,	*Potéui,*		
	Podía,	*Potéua, or Potéa,*		
	Podíamos,	*Poteuámo,*		
	Podíades,	*Poteuáte,*		
	Podían.	*Poteuano.*		
First Perfect.	Púde,	*Potei,*	*Potui, &c.*	I could or haue beene able, &c.
	Pudíste,	*Potesti,*		
	Pudo,	*Puoté,*		
	Pudímos,	*Potémmo,*		
	Pudístes,	*Poteste,*		
	Pudiéron.	*Poterono & Pótero.*		
Second Perfect.	He	*Ho*	*Potui, &c. vt supra.*	I could or haue beene able, &c. as next aboue.
	as	*Hai*		
	a	*Ha*		
	Hémos	*Habbiámo*		
	avéys	*Hauete*		
	an	*Hanno*		
	Podído.	*Potúto.*		
Pluperfect.	Avía	*Hauéua*	*Potueram, &c.*	I had beene able, &c.
	Avías	*Hauéuo*		
	Avía	*Hauéua*		
	Avíamos	*Haueuámo*		
	Avíades	*Haueuáte*		
	Avían	*Haueuáno*		
	Podído.	*Potúto.*		
Future.	Podré,	*Potró,*	*Potero, &c.*	I shal or will be able, &c.
	Podrás,	*Potrái,*		
	Podrá,	*Potrá,*		
	Podrémos,	*Potrémo,*		
	Podréys,	*Potréte,*		
	Podrán,	*Potránno,*		

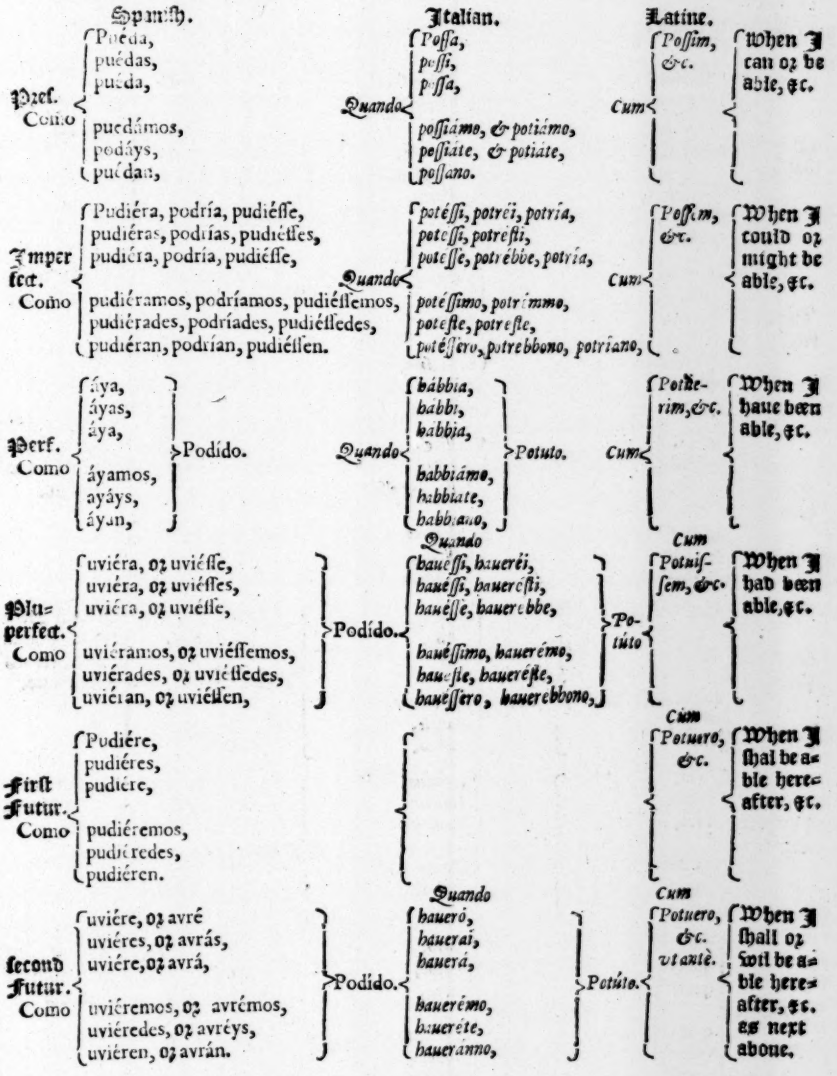
Imperatiue mood wanteth as in the Latine.

Of

Impat { Peude — peus toy — / Peuda — qu'il peusse — } podamos — peussions / poded — peussiez / puédan — qu'ils peussent —

Of Verbes Irregular the ſecond Coniugation in ER, *as* PODER. PODER

Subiunctiue mood.



Infinitiue mod Preſent tenſe.

Podér,] *Potére*,] *Poſſe*,] To be able.

Preterperfect tenſe.

Avér podído,] *Hauer potuto.*] *Potuiſſe*,] To haue bœne able.

Gerund.

Pudiéndo,] *Poténdo*,] In being able.

Participle.

Podído,] *Potúto*,] Able.

of

Querér. *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in* ER, *as* QVERER, *in Italian, Volere,*] in Latine *Velle,*] To will, to loue, or to be willing.

Indicatiue mood.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	yo QVIE'RO, tu Quiéres, aquel Quiére, Plu. querémos, queréys, quiéren.	*Io VO'GLIO,* *tu vuoi,* *colúi vuole,* Plu. *vogliámo,* *voléte,* *vógliono,*	*Volo,* *Vis, &c.*	I will, or loue, &c.
Imperfect.	quería, querías, quería, queríamos, queríades, querían.	*voléua,* *voléui,* *voléua.* *voleuámo,* *voleuáte,* *voléuano.*	*Volebam, &c.*	I did will, or I did loue, &c.
First Perfect.	quise, quisíste, quíso, quisímos, quisístes, quisiéron.	*volli, & volsi,* *volésti,* *volle, & volse.* *volémmo,* *volléste,* *vólsero.*	*Volui, &c.*	I haue willed, or I haue loued, &c.
Second Perfect.	He, as, a, hémos, or avémos, avéys, an,	Querído. *Ho,* *Hai,* *Ha,* *Habbiámo,* *Hauéte,* *Hánno,* Volúto	*Volui, &c. vt antè.*	I haue willed, or I haue loued, &c. as next aboue.
Pluperfect.	Avía, Avías, Avía, Avíamos, Avíades, Avían,	Querído. *Hauéua,* *Hauéui,* *Hauéua,* *Haueuámo,* *Haueuáte,* *Hauéuano,* Volúto.	*Volueram, &c.*	I had willed, or I had loued, &c.
Future.	querré, querrás, querrá, querrémos, querréys, querrán,	*vorró,* *vorrái,* *vorrá,* *vorrémo,* *vorréte,* *vorránno.*	*Volam, &c.*	I will, or shall will or loue, &c.

Imperatiue mood.

Imperatiue mood.	quére tu, quera aquél, querámos, queréd, quéran.	*vuoi tu,* *voglia colúi,* *vogliámo,* *vogliate,* *vogliano.*	Latine wanteth the Imperatiue mood.	Will thou, or loue thou, &c.

Of

Of Verbes Irregular the ſecond Coniugation in ER, *as* QVERER. Querér.

Subiunctiue mode.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latine.	
Preſ. Como	Quéra, or Quérra, &c. Quéras, Quéra, Querámos, Queráys, Quéran.	*Vóglia,* *Vógli,* *Voglia,* *Vogliámo,* *Vogliáte,* *Vógliano.*	*Velim,* &c.	When I will or loue, &c.
Imperf. Como	Quiſiéra, quérria, quiſiéſſe, Quiſiéras, querrías, quiſiéſſes, Quiſiéra, querría, quiſiéſſe, Quiſiéramos, querríamos, quiſiéſſemos, Quiſiérades, querríades, quiſiéſſedes, Quiſiéran, querrían, quiſieſſen.	*Voleſſi, vorei, & vorría,* *Volesti, vorreſti,* *Voleſſe, vorrebbe, vorría,* *Volèſſimo, voremmo,* *Voleſte, voreſte,* *Voleſſero, vorebbono, & vorríano.*	*Vellem,* &c.	When I would or did loue, &c.
Perfect. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya, Ayámos, Ayáys, áyan,	*Habbia* *Habbi* *Habbia* *Habbiámo* *Habbiate* *Habbiano*	*Voluerim,* &c.	When I haue willed or loued, &c.
Pluper. Como	Uviéra or uvi'ſſe, uviéras or uviéſſes, uviéra or uviéſſe, uviéramos or uviéſſemos, uviérades or uviéſſedes, uviéran or uviéſſen,	*Haueſſi, or hauerei,* *Haueſti, or haureſti,* *Haueſſe, or haurebbe,* *Hauéſſimo, or hauerémo,* *Hauéſte, or haureſte,* *Haueſſero, or haurebbono,*	*Voluiſſem,* &c.	When I had willed or loued, &c.
First Future. Como	Quiſiére, Quiſiéres, Quiſiére, Quiſiéremos, Quiſiéredes, Quiſiéren.	*Haueró,* *Haurai,* *Haurá,* *Haurémo,* *Hauréte,* *Haueránno,*	*Voluero,* &c.	When I ſhall will or loue, &c.
Second Future. Como	Uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán,	*Haueró,* *Haurai,* *Haurá,* *Haurémo,* *Haurete,* *Haueránno,*	*Voluero,* &c. *Etiamſi.*	When I ſhall bee willing or loue, &c.

Infinitiue mode Preſent tenſe.

Querér,] *Volere,*] *Velle,*] to will or loue.

Preterperfect tenſe.

avér Querído,] *hauer Voluto,*] *Voluiſſe,*] to haue loued or beene willing.

Gerund.

Queriéndo,] *Volendo,*] *Volendo*] In being willing or louing.

Participle.

Querído,] *Voluto,*] loued, willed.

Adde to this Verbe this particle Mas, and ſo declyne it thorow all modes and tenſes, and it makes the ſignification to be in Latine *Malo*, in Engliſh I had leiſer, I would rather, as yo Quiéro mas, in Latine *Malo*, I would leiſer, or loue more: tu quiéres mas, *Mauis*, thou hadſt rather or loueſt more. Preterimperfect tenſe, yo Quería mas, I would rather or loued more. Preterperfect, Quiſe mas, &c.

Of

PONER *of Verbes Irregular the ſecond Conjugation in* ER, *as* PONER, *in Italian* *Ponere, Porre, Mettere,* in Latine, *Ponere, Locare,* to put, to place.

Indicatiue mood.

	Spaniſh.		Italian.		Latine.	
Preſ.	YO PONGO,		*IO PO'NGO,*		*Pono, &c.*	I do put, &c.
	tu Pónes,		*tu Póni,*			
	aquél Póne,		*colui Póne,*			
	Plu.		Plu.			
	Ponémos,		*Poniámo,*			
	Poneys,		*Ponéte,*			
	Pónen.		*Póngono,*			
Imperfect.	Ponía,		*Ponéua,*		*Ponebam, &c.*	I did put, &c.
	Ponías,		*Ponéui,*			
	Ponía,		*Ponéua.*			
	Poníamos,		*Poneuámo,*			
	Poníades,		*Poneuáte,*			
	Ponían.		*Ponéuano.*			
First Perfect.	Púſe,		*Póſi,*		*Poſui, &c.*	I haue put, &c.
	Puſiſte,		*Ponéſti,*			
	Púſo,		*Póſe.*			
	Puſimos,		*Ponémmo,*			
	Puſiſtes,		*Ponéſte,*			
	Puſiéron.		*Póſero.*			
Second Perfect.	He,	Puéſto.	*Ho,*	*Poſto.*	*Poſui, &c.*	I haue put, &c.
	as,		*Hai,*			
	a,		*Ha,*			
	Avémos, y hémos,		*Habbiámo,*			
	avéys,		*Haué'te,*			
	an,		*Hánno,*			
Pluperfect.	Avía,	Puéſto.	*Haueúa,*	*Poſto.*	*Poſueram, &c.*	I had put, &c.
	Avías,		*Haué'ui,*			
	Avía,		*Haueúa,*			
	Avíamos,		*Haueuámo,*			
	Avíades,		*Haueuáte,*			
	Avían,		*Haueúano,*			
Future.	Porné, or Pondré,		*Poneró, & Porró,*		*Ponam, &c.*	I ſhal or will put, &c.
	Pornás, or Pondrás,		*Ponerái, & Porrái,*			
	Porná, or Pondrá,		*Ponerá, & Porrá,*			
	Pornémos, or Pondrémos,		*Ponerémo, & Porrémo,*			
	Pornéys, or Pondréys,		*Ponerete, & Porréte,*			
	Pornán, or Pondrán.		*Poneránno, & Porránno.*			

Imperatiue mood.

Pón tu,	*Pone tu,*	*Pone, Poneto, Ponat, Poneto, &c.*	Put thou,
Pónga aquél,	*Pónga colui,*		put he, or let him put, &c.
Pongámos,	*Poniámo,*		
Poned,	*Ponéte,*		
Póngan.	*Póngano.*		

of

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, *as* PONER. PONER

Subiunctiue mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres. Como	Pónga, Póngas, Pónga. Pongámos, Pongáys, Póngan.	*Quando* *Pónga, Pónghi, Pónga, Poniámo, Poniáte, Póngano.*	*Cum* *Ponam, &c.*	When I doe put, &c.
Imperf. Como	Pusiéra, pornía *or* pondría, pusiésse, Pusiéras, pornías *or* pondrías, pusiésses, Pusiéra, pornía *or* pondría, pusiésse. Pusiéramos, porníamos *or* pondríamos, pusiéssemos Pusiérades, porníades *or* pondríades, pusiéssedes, Pusiéran, pornían *or* pondrían, pusiéssen.	*Quando* *Ponéssi, Ponerei, Ponéssi, Ponerésti, Ponésse, Ponerébbe, Ponéssimo, Ponerémmo, Ponéste, Ponerésté, Ponéssero, Ponerébbono.*	*Cum* *Ponerem, &c.*	When I did put, &c.
Perfect. Como	áya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan } Puésto.	*Quando* *Hábbia, Habbi, Habbia, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Habbiano* } *Pósto.*	*Cum* *Posuerim, &c.*	When I haue put, &c.
Pluper. Como	uviéra or uviésse, uviéras or uviésses, uviéra or uviésse, uviéramos or uviéssemos, uviéredes or uviéssedes, uviéran or uviéssen } Puésto.	*Quando* *Hauerei or Hauessi, Hauerésti or Hauésti, Hauerébbe or Hauésse, Hauerémmo or Hauéssimo, Hauerésté or Hauéste, Haberébbono or Hauéssero,* } *Pósto.*	*Cum* *Posuissem,*	When I had put, &c.
First Future. Como	Pusiére, Pusiéres, Pusiére. Pusiéremos, Pusiéredes, Pusiéren.		*Cum* *Posuero, &c.*	When I shall or will put, &c.
Second Future. Como	Uviére or avré, uviéres or avrás, uviére or avrá, uviéremos or avrémos, uviéredes or avréys, uviéren or avrán, } Puésto.	*Quando* *Haueró, Hauerái, Hauerá, Hauerémo, Hauerete, Haueránno* } *Posto.*	*Cum* *Posuero, &c.*	When I shall or will put, &c.

Infinitiue mood Present tense.

PONE'R,] *Ponere, Mettere, Porre,*] *Ponere,*] **to Put.**

Preterperfect tense.

Avér Puésto,] *Hauer Posto,*] *Posuisse,*] **to haue Put.**

Gerund.

Poniendo,] *Ponendo,*] *Ponendo*] **in Putting.**

Participle.

Puésto,] *Posto,*] *Positus,*] **Put.**

After this manner are declined in all points. Componér, **to compose**, yo Compóngo, **I doe compose**, yo Compúse, **I haue composed, &c. Also** Disponér, **to dispose**, yo Dispongo, **I dispose**, Dispúse, **I haue disposed. And** Anteponér, **to put before**, yo Antepongo, **I doe put before**, Antepúse, **I haue put before. So** Proponér, **to set out, to alledge**, yo Propóngo, Propúse.

Of

HAZER

Of Verbes Irregular the ſecond Coniugation in ER, *as* HAZER, in Italian *Fare*, in Latine *Facere*, to doe, to make.

Indicatiue mood.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latine.	
Preſ.	yo HA'GO,	*Io FO,*	*Facio, &c.*	I doe make or doe, &c.
	tu Házes,	*tu Fai,*		
	aquel Háze.	*colui Fa.*		
	Hazémos,	*Facciámo,*		
	Hazéis,	*Fate,*		
	Házen.	*Fánno.*		
Imperfect.	Hazía,	*Facéua,*	*Faciebam, &c.*	I did make or doe, &c.
	Hazías,	*Facéui,*		
	Hazía.	*Facéua.*		
	Hazíamos,	*Faceuámo,*		
	Hazíades,	*Faceuáte,*		
	Hazían.	*Facéuano.*		
First Perfect.	Híze.	*Féci,*	*Feci, &c.*	I haue made or done, &c.
	Hizíſte,	*Facéſti,*		
	Hízo.	*Fece.*		
	Hizímos,	*Facémmo,*		
	Hizíſtes,	*Faceſte,*		
	Hiziéron.	*Fécero.*		
Second Perfect.	He / as / a / Hémos / avéys / an — Hécho.	*Ho / Hai / Ha / Habbiámo / Hauéte / Hanno* — *Fátto.*	*Feci, &c. vt ante.*	I haue made or done, &c.
Pluperfect.	Avía / Avías / Avía / Avíamos / Aviades / Avían — Hecho.	*Hauéua / Hauéui / Hauéua / Haueuámo / Haueuáte / Haueuano* — *Fátto.*	*Feceram, &c.*	I had made or done, &c.
Future.	Haré,	*Farò,*	*Faciam, &c.*	I ſhal or will make or doe, &c.
	Harás,	*Farái,*		
	Hará.	*Fará.*		
	Harémos,	*Farémo,*		
	Haréys,	*Faréte,*		
	Harán.	*Faránno.*		

Imperatiue mood.

Ház tu,	*Fa tu,*	*Fac, facito, &c.*	Doe thou, or make thou, &c.
Hága aquel.	*Fáccia colui.*		
Hagámos,	*Facciámo,*		
Hazéd,	*Fate,*		
Hágan.	*Fácciano.*		

Of

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, *as* HAZER. HAZER

Subiunctiue moode.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	Haga, hágas, hága, hagámos, hagáys, hágan.	Quando	*Faccia, facci, faccia, facciamo, facciáte, fácciano.*	Cum	*Faciam, &c.*	When I doe make or doe, &c.
Imper. Como	hiziéra, haría, hiziésse, hiziéras, harías, hiziésses, hiziéra, haría, hiziésse, hiziéramos, haríamos, hiziéssemos, hiziérades, haríades, hiziéssedes, hiziéran, harían, hiziéssen.	Quando	*facessi, farei, faría, facésti, farésti, facesse, farebbe, faría, facéssimo, farémmo, facésti, fareste, facéssero, farebbono, faríano*	Cum	*Facerem, &c.*	When I did doe or make, &c.
Perfect. Como	áya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan, Hecho.	Quando	*hábbia, hábbi, hábbia, habbiámo, habbiate, habbiano.*	Fatto	Cum *Fecerim, &c.*	When I haue made or done, &c.
Pluper. Como	uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviessen, Hecho.	Quando	*hauerei, or hauessi, hauerésti, or hauésti, hauerebbe, or hauesse, hauerémmo or hauessimo, hauerésti or haueste, hauerebbono, or hauessimo*	Fatto	Cum *Fecissem, &c.*	When I had made or done, &c.
First future. Como	hiziére, hiziéres, hiziére, hiziéremos, hiziéredes, hiziéren.			Cum	*Fecero, &c.*	When I shall or will make or doe, &c.
second Futur. Como	Uviére or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán, Hecho.		*Haueró, Hauerái. Hauerá, Hauerémo, Hauerete, hauerânno,*	Fatto.	Cum *Fecero, &c. vt antè,*	When I shall or will make or doe, &c.

Infinitiue moode Present tense.

Hazér,] *Fare,*] *Facere,* To doe, to make.

Preterperfect tense.

Aver hecho,] *Hauer fatto*] *Fecisse,*] To haue made or done, &c.

Future tense.

Aver or esperar de hazer, { *Douer fare, Esser per fare, Hauer a fáre.* } *Facturum esse vel fore,* { To make or do hereafter.

Gerund.

Haziéndo] *Facendo,*] *Faciendo,*] In doing or making, &c.

Supine of the Actiue voice.

A Hazér,] *Di fare,*] *Factum,*] **To make or doe.**

Supine of the Passiue voice.

De sér hécho,] *D'esser fatto,*] *Factu,*] **To be made or done.**

Participle of the Actiue and Present tense.

El que háze,] *Facente,*] *Faciens,*] **One doing or making.**

Participle of the Passiue and Preter tense.

Hécho] *Fátto,*] *Factus,*] **Made or done, &c.**

Participle of the Future tense.

El que ha, or Espéra de hazér, { *Hauendo a fare,* / *Essendo per fáre,* } *Facturus,*] **About to doe, &c.**

CABER. *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in* ER, *as* CABER, **in Italian** *Capere,*] **Latine** *Continere & Contineri,*] **To containe, or to be contained.**

Indicatiue mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	Yo QVE'PO,	Io CAPISCO,	*Ego contineo,*	I containe,
	tu cábes.	*tu capísci,*	*tu continés, &c.*	Thou containest, &c.
	aquél cábe,	*colui capísce,*	*Ego contineor,*	
			tu contineris, &c.	Thou art contained, &c.
	cabémos,	*capiámo,*		
	cabéys,	*capite,*		
	cáben.	*capiscono,*		
Imperfect.	cabía,	*capiua,*	*continebam, &c.*	I did containe, &c.
	cabías,	*capiui,*	*continebar, &c.*	I was contained, &c.
	cabía,	*capiua,*		
	cabíamos,	*capiuámo,*		
	cabíades,	*capiuate,*		
	cabían.	*capiuano.*		
First Perf.	cúpe,	*capi, or capii,*	*continui, &c.*	I haue contained, &c.
	cupíste,	*capísti,*	*contentus sum vel*	I haue been
	cúpo.	*capé,*	*fui, &c.*	contained, &c.
	cupímos,	*capimmo,*		
	cupístes,	*capiste,*		
	cupiéron.	*capirono,*		
Second Perfect.	he / as / a / avémos / avéys / an — Cabído.	*Ho, Hai, Ha, Habbiámo, Haueéte, Hánno,* — *capito.*	*continui, &c.* / *contentus sum vel fui, &c.*	I haue contained, &c. I haue been contained, &c.
Pluperfect.	avía / avías / avía / avíamos / avíades / avían — Cabído.	*Haueúa, Haueui, Haueúa, Haueuámo, Haueuáte, Haueuano,* — *capito.*	*continueram, &c.* / *contentus eram vel fueram, &c.*	I had contained, &c. I had been contained, &c.
future.	cabré,	*caperó,*	*continebo, &c.*	I shall or will
	cabrás,	*capirái,*	*continebor, &c.*	containe, &c.
	cabrá,	*capirá,*		I shal or will be
	cabrémos,	*capiréme,*		contained, &c.
	cabréys,	*capiréte,*		
	cabrán.	*capiránno.*		

Of Verbes Irregular the ſecond Coniugation in ER, *as* CABER. CABER

Subiunctiue mode.

	Spaniſh.		Italian.		Latine.	
Preſ. Como	Quépa, Quépas, Quépa, Quepámos, Quepáys, Quépan.	Quando	Capíſca, Capiſci, Capiſca, Capiámo, Capiáte, Capiſcano.	Cum	Contineam, &c. Continear, &c.	when I do contain, &c. when I am contained, &c.
Imperfect. Como	Cupiéra, cabría, cupiéſſe. Cupiéras, cabrías, cupiéſſes, Cupiéra, cabría, cupiéſſe, Cupiéramos, cabríamos, cupiéſſemos, Cupiérades, cabríades, cupiéſſedes, Cupiéran, cabrían, cupiéſſen.	Quando	Capiſſi, caperirei, caperia, Capiſti, capireſti, Capiſſe, capirébbe, caperia Capiſſimo, capirémmo, Capiſte, capiréſte, Capiſſero, capirébbono, capiriano.	Cum	Continerem, &c. Continerer, &c.	when I did containe, &c. when I was contained, &c.
Perfect. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya, Ayámos, ayáys, áyan,	Cabído.	Habbia, Habbi, Habbia, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Habbiano,	Capito. Cum	Continuerim, &c. Contentus ſim, &c.	when I haue contained, &c. when I haue bæne contained, &c.
Pluperf. Como	Uviéra, oz uviéſſe, uviéras, oz uviéſſes, uviéra, oz uviéſſe, uviéramos, oz uviéſſemos, uviérades, oz uviéſſedes, uviéran, oz uviéſſen,	Cabído.	Haueſſi, & haueréi, Haueſti, & haueréſti, Haueſti, & hauerébbe, Haueſſimo, & haueréminno Haueſte, & haueréſte, Haueſſero, & hauerébbono	Capito. Cum	Cõtinuiſſem, &c. Contentus eſſem &c.	when I had containd, &c. when I hadbeen, &c.
Future. Como	Cupiére, Cupiéres, Cupiére, Cupiéremos, Cupiéredes, Cupiéren.			Cum	Continuero, &c. Contentus ero, &c.	when I ſhall containe, &c. when I ſhall bee contained, &c.

Infinitiue mod Preſent tenſe.

CABE'R,] *Capere,* { *Continere,* } to containe, &c.
{ *Contineri,* } to be contained, &c.

Preterperfect tenſe.

avér Cabído,] *hauer capito,* { *Continuiſſe,* } to haue contained, &c.
{ *Contentum eſſe vel fuiſſe,* } to haue bæne contained, &c.

Gerund.

Cabiéndo,] *Capendo,*] *Continendo,* { In containing, &c.
{ In being contained, &c.

Participle.

Cabído,] *capito,*] *Contentus,*] contained.

VER. *Of Verbes Irregular the ſecond Coniugation in* ER, *as* VER, *in Italian* *Vedere*, Latine *Videre*, to See.

Indicatiue mood.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pꝛeſ.	YO VE'O,	*IO Védo & VE'GGIO,*	*Video,&c.*	I doe ſee, &c.
	tu Vées,	*tu Vedi,*		
	aquél Vée,	*colui Véde,*		
	Vémos,	*Vediámo, & Veggiámo,*		
	Véys,	*Vedéte,*		
	Véen.	*Vedeno, & Véggono.*		
Imperfect. Como	Vía,	*Vedéua, & Vedéa,*	*Videbam, &c.*	I did ſee, &c.
	Vías,	*Vedéui,*		
	Vía,	*Vedéua, & Vedéa,*		
	Víamos,	*Vedeuamo,*		
	Víades,	*Vedeuáte,*		
	Vían,	*Vedéuano, & Vedéano.*		
First Perfect.	Ví oꝛ Víde,	*Vidi, oꝛ Vidi,*	*Vidi, &c.*	I haue ſeene, &c.
	Viſte, oꝛ Viſte, vidiſte	*Vedeſti,*		
	Vió, oꝛ Vído,	*Vidde.*		
	Vímos,	*Vidémmo,*		
	Viſtes,	*Vidéſti,*		
	Viéron.	*Viddero.*		
Second Perfect.	He / as / a / Hémos / avéys / an — Viſto.	*Ho / Hai / Ha / Habbiámo / Hauéte / Hánno* — *Veduto, oꝛ Viſto.*	*Vidi, &c.*	I haue ſeene, &c.
Pluperfect.	Avía / Avías / Avía / Avíamos / Avíades / Avían — Viſto.	*Hauéua / Haueui / Haueua / Hauenámo / Haueuáte / Haueuano* — *Veduto, oꝛ V. ſto.*	*Videram, &c.*	I had ſeene, &c.
Future.	Veré,	*Vederó, & Vedrò,*	*Videbo,&c.*	I ſhall oꝛ will ſee, &c.
	Verás,	*Vederái, & Vedrái,*		
	Verá,	*Vederá, & Vedrá.*		
	Verémos,	*Vederémo, & Vedrémo,*		
	Veréys,	*Vederéte, & Vedréte,*		
	Verán.	*Vederánno, & Vedranno.*		

Imperatiue mood.

Vée tu,	*Veditu,*	*Vide, videto, &c.*	See thou, &c.
Véa aquél,	*Veda, & veggacolui,*		
Veámos,	*Veggiámo,*		
Véd,	*Vedete.*		
Véan.	*Vedano, & Véggano.*		

In the Subiunctiue and Infinitiue mood altogether as verbes afoꝛegoing, as the Pꝛeſent tenſe Véa, the Pꝛetertimperfect Viéra, vería, viéſſe, the Pꝛeterperfect áya viſto, the Pꝛeterpluperfect uviéra, oꝛ uviéſſe, viſto, the Future, viére, Infinitiue, vér, Participle, viſto.

Solér

Solér, to be wont or accuſtomed. Indicat. Pꝛeſ. yo Suélo, I am wont, tu Suéles, aquél Suéle, thou art wont, he is wont. Solémos, we are wont, Soléys, ye are wont, Suélen, they are wont. Imperfect. Solia. Perfect. Solí. In like manner Dolér, to grieue, to be ſorry, declined, yo Duélo, Dolia, Dolí, He Dolído, &c.

Of the third and laſt Coniugation of Verbs Irregular in IR *or* Yr, *as* VENIR, in Italian and Latine *Venire*, to Come. VENIR.

Indicatiue mode.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latine.
Pꝛeſ.	yo VENGO, / tu Viénes, / aquel Viéne. / Plur. / Venímos, / Venís, / Viénen.	Io VENGO, / tu vieni, / colui viene. / Veniámo, / Venite, / Véngono.	Venio, &c. — I doe come, &c.
Imperf.	Venía, / Venías, / Venía, / Veníamos, / Veníades, / Venían.	Veniua, / Veniui, / Veniua. / Veniuámo. / Veniuáte, / Veníuano.	Veniebam, &c. — I did come, &c.
Firſt Perf.	Víne, / Veníſte, / Víno, / Venímos, / Veníſteſ. / Veniéron.	Vénni, / Vennéſti, / Vénne. / Venémmo, / Venéſte, / Vénnero.	Veni, &c. — I haue come, &c.
Secõd Perf.	He, as, a, Hémos, avéys, an } Venído.	Sono, ſei, é } Venúto. / Siámo, Sete, Sono } Venúti.	Veni, &c. — I haue come, &c.
Plu=perf.	Avia, Avías, Avía, Avíamos, Avíades, Avían } Venído.	E'ra, eri, era } Venúto. / Erauámo, Erauáte, E'rano } Venúti.	Veneram, &c. — I had come, &c.
Fut.	Vendré or Verné, / Vendrás or Vernás, / Vendrá or Verná, / Vendrémos or Vernémos, / Vendréys or Vernéys, / Vendrán or Vernán.	Veniró or Verró, / Venerái or Verrái, / Venerá or Verrá. / Venirémo or Verrémo / Venirête or Verréte. / Veniránno or Verránno.	Veniam, &c — I ſhall or will come, &c.

Imperatiue mode.

Ven tu,	*Vien tu,*	*Veni, Venite,* &c. Come thou, &c.
Vénga aquél.	*Vénga colui.*	
Vengámos,	*Veniámo,*	
Venid,	*Venite,*	
Véngan.	*Véngano.*	

Subiunctiue mod.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.
Pret. Como	Vénga, véngas, vénga, vengámos, vengáys, véngan.	*Venga, venghi, venga, veniámo, veniáte, véngano.* Quando	*Veniam,* &c. Cum. When I do come, &c.
Imper Como	Viniéra, vernía, viniésse, viniéras, vernías, viniésses, viniéra, vernía, viniésse, Viniéramos, verníamos, viniéssemos, viniérades, verniades, viniéssedes, viniéran, vernían, viniéssen.	*venissi, venerei, verrei, verria, venisti, venerésti, verrésti, venisse, venerébbe, verrébbe, verria, venissimo, venirémmo, verémmo, venisse, venirésse, verrésse, venissero, venirébbono, verrébbono, verriano.* Quando	*Venirem* &c. Cum. When I did come, &c.
Imperfect. Como	áya, áyas, áya, áyamos, ayáys, áyan. Venído.	*sia, sii & sia, sia, siámo, siáte, siano.* Venuto. Venuti. Quando	*Venerim* &c. Cum. When I haue come, &c.
pluperfect, &c. Como	Uviéra, oz uviésse, uviéras, oz uviésses, uviéra, oz uviésse, uviéramos, oz uviéssemos, uviérades, oz uviéssedes, uviéran, oz uviéssen, Venído.	*fóssi, sarei, fósti, saréfti, fósse, sarébbe,* Venuto. *fóssimo, sarémmo, fóste, saréste, fóssero, sarébbono,* Venuti.	*Veníssem* &c. When I had come &c.
First future. Como	*veniére, venières, veniére, veniéremos, venieredes, venieren.*		*Venero,* &c. Cum. When I shall or will come, &c.
Second future. Como	Uviére, oz avré, uviéres, oz avrás, uviére, oz avrá, uviéremos, oz avrémos, uviéredes, oz avréys, uviéren, oz avrán, Venído.	*saró, sarai, sará,* Venúto. *sarémo, saréte, saránno,* Venuti.	*Venero,* &c. Cum. When I shall or will come, &c.

Infinitiue

Infinitiue mod Present tense.

Venír,] *Venire,*] *Venire,*] To come.

Preterperfect tense.

Sér venido,] *Eſſere venuto,*] *Veniſſe,*] To haue come.

Future tense.

Avér o esperár de venír { *Douer venire,* / *Hauer a venire,* / *Eſſer per venire,* } *Venturum eſſe,*] To come hereafter.

Gerund.

Veniéndo,] *Venendo, Veniendo,*] In comming.

Participle of the Present and Actiue voice.

El que viéne,] *Venente,*] *Veniens,*] One comming.

Participle of the Preter tense and Passiue voice, &c.

Venído,] *Venuto,*] *Qui venit,*] Come.

These Verbes following in Ir, thus formed in the Present and Preterperfect Tense.

Infinitiues.	Pres.	Preterp.
Adormír, to fall aſleepe,	yo Aduérmo,	Adormí.
Dormír, to ſleepe,	yo Duérmo,	Dormí.
Avertír, to marke,	yo Avíerto,	Averti.
Arrepentír, to repent,	yo Arrepiénto,	Arrepentí.
Cobrír, to recouer,	yo Cúbro,	Cobrí.
Concebír, to conceiue,	ye Concíbo,	Concebí.
Cernír, to ſift meale,	yo Cígrno,	Cerní.
Conſentír, to conſent,	yo Conſiénto,	Conſentí.
Elegír, to chooſe out,	yo Elíjo,	Elegí.
Fingír, to faine,	yo Finjo,	Fingí.
Gemír, to grone,	yo Gimo,	Gemí.
Mentír, to lie,	yo Miénto,	Mentí.
Ungír, to annoint,	yo Unjo,	Ungí.
Salír, to goe forth,	yo Sálgo,	Saly.
Diferír, to differ,	yo Difiéro,	Diferí.

Imperfect of the Indicat. Difería.
Imperfect of the Subiunct. Diferiría.

Sofrír, to ſuffer, yo Sófro, Sofrí.
Imperfect of the Indicat. Sofría.
Imperfect of the Subiunct. Soffriría.

The Compounds of this verbe Venír, Véngo, are declined in euery reſpect in all Moodes and Tenſes throughout as it is, as Revenír, to returne, Revéngo, Revíne, &c. Convenír, to agree, to be expedient, yo Convéngo, Convíne. Devenír, to become, yo Devéngo, Devíne. Sobrevenír, to come vpon ſuddenly, yo Sobrevéngo, Sobrevíne.

Of the third and laſt Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in IR, *&* YR, as Dezir,] in Italian *Dire,*] Latine *Dicere*] to ſay. DEZIR.

Indicatiue mod.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	Digo,	*Dico,*	*Dico,* &c.	I ſay, &c.
	dizes,	*dici,* or *di,*		
	díze,	*dice,*		
	dezímos,	*diciamo,*		
	dezís,	*dite,*		
	dízen.	*dícono,*		

Imperfect

Imper.	Dezía, dezías, dezía, Dezíamos, dezíades, dezían.	Diceua, dicéui, diceua. dicebámo, diceuáte, dicéuano.	Dicebam &c.	I did say, &c.
First Perfect.	díxe, dixíste, díxo, dixímos, dixístes, dixéron.	díſſi, diceſti, diſſe, dicémmo, diceſte, diſſero.	Dixi, &c.	I haue said, &c.
Second Perf.	hé, as, a, hémos, avéys, án,	Dícho.	Ho Hai Ha Habbiámo Haueéte Hánno	Détto.	Dixi, &c.	I haue said, &c.
Pluperfect.	avía, avías, avía, aviámos, aviades, avían,	Dícho.	Haueúa Haueúi Haucua Haueuámo Haueuáte Haueuano	Détto.	Dixeram, &c.	I had said, &c.
Future.	diré, dirás, dirá, dirémos, diréys, dirán.	diró, dirái, dirá, diremo, diréte, diránno.	Dicam, &c.	I shal or will say, &c.

Imperatiue mood.

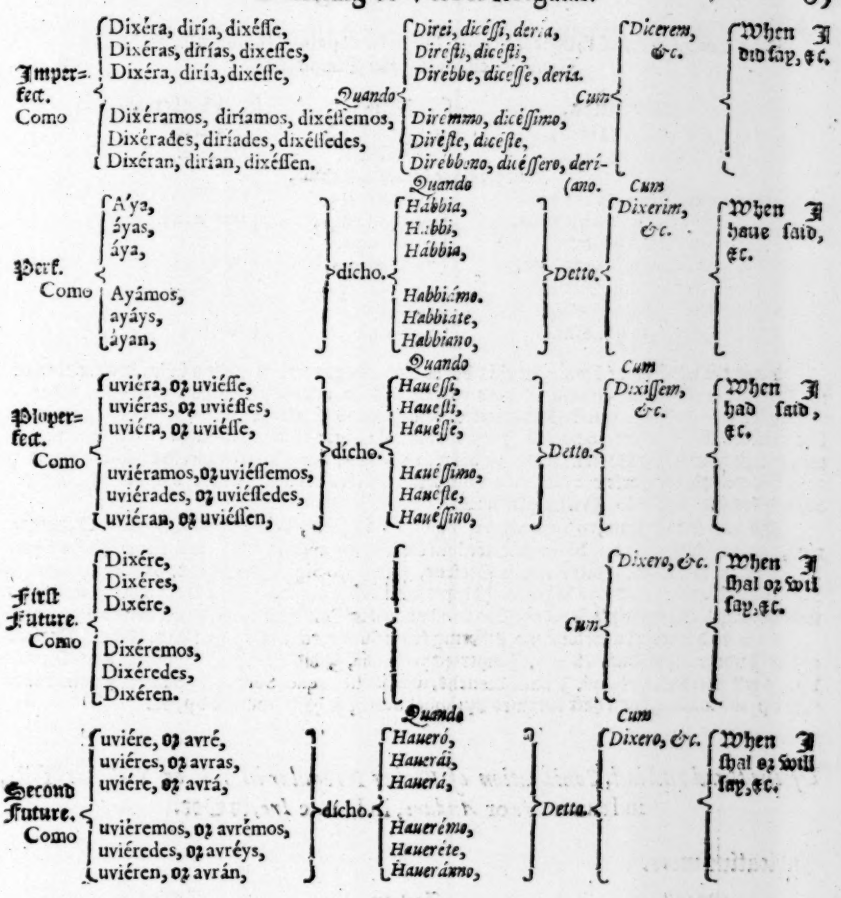
Imperatiue mood.	Di tu, díga aquel, digámos, dezíd, dígan.	Di, or dice tu, dica colui, diceámo, dite, dícano.	Dic, dicito, &c.	Say you, &c.

Note that you shall finde with good Authors Dezi for Dezíd, in the second person plurall number of the Imperatiue.

Subiunctiue mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pret. Como	Díga, Dígas, Díga, Digámos, Digáys, Dígan.	Quando Dica, Dici, Dica, Diciámo, Diciáte, Dícano.	Cum Dicam, &c.	When I doe say, &c.

Imperfect



Infinitiue mode Present tense.

DEZIR,] *Dire*,] *Dicere*,] to say, to tell.

Preterperfect tense.

Avér Dícho,] *hauer Detto*,] *Dixiſſe*,] to haue said oz told.

Future tense.

Avér de Dezir, { *Douer dire*, / *Eſſer per dire*, / *Hauer a dire*, } *Dicturum eſſe*,] to say hereafter.

Gerunds.

Deziéndo,] *Dicendo*,] *Dicendo*,] In saying.

Participle of the Present tense and Active voice.

El que Dize,] *Dicente*,] *Dicens*,] one telling oz saying.

Participle of the Preter tense and Passiue voice.

Dícho,] *Detto*,] *Dictus*,] told, said, spoken.

Participle of the Future tense.

El que ha, oz Espera de Dezir, { *Douendo dire*, / *Hauendo a dire*, / *Eſſendo per dire*, } *Dicturus*,] about to say hereafter.

The

The Compounds of this verbe Dezír, Digo, in all points throw all Mods and Tenses declined like the Simple, as

Infinitiues.	Pret.	Preterp.
Biendezír, to bleſſe,	yo Biendígo,	Biendíxe.
Maldezír, to curſe,	yo Maldígo,	Maldíxe.
In like ſort theſe following thus,		
Conduzír, to conduct,	yo Conduſgo,	Condúxe.
Introduzír, to bring in,	yo Introduſgo,	Introdúxe.
Induzír, to induce,	yo Induſgo,	Indúxe.
Traduzír, to tranſlate,	yo Traduſgo,	Tradúxe.
Produzír, to produce,	yo Produzgo,	Produxe.
Salír, to goe forth,	yo Salgo,	Salí.
Regír, to gouerne,	yo Rijo,	Regí.

After the manner of Dezír, is this verbe Salír, to goe out or make a ſally, declined, as in the Preſent tenſe of the Indicatiue mod yo Sálgo, I goe out, tu Sáles, thou goeſt out, &c. Preterimperfect yo Salía, &c. First Preterperfect, Salí. Second Preterperfect, he Salído, &c. Pluperfect. avía Salido. Future, yo Saldré. Imperatiue Sal tu, goe thou out, Sálga aquél, let him goe out, &c. Subiunctiue Preſent tenſe, yo Sálga, tu Sálgas, &c. Preterimperfect Saliéra, Saldría, Saliéſſe, &c. Preterperfect, aya Salido. Pluperfect, uviéra Salído. Future, Saliére. Infinitiue, Salír. Gerund Saliéndo. Participle Salido.

So Seguir to follow, yo Sígo, Siguía, Siguí. He Seguído, avía Seguído, Seguiré. Imperatiue, Sigue tu, follow thou, Siga aquél, let him follow, Sigámos, let vs follow, Seguid, follow ye, Sigan, let them follow. Subiunctiue Preſent, Como yo Síga. Imperfect, Siguiéra, Seguiría, Siguiéſſe. Preterperfect, áya Seguído. Pluperfect, uviéſſe Seguído. Future, Seguiére, &c. Infinitiue, Seguír, Participle Seguído. So in all points is Conſeguír to obtaine, declined.

Sumír, to drench or ouerwhelme, differing from Sumár, to ſumme vp, thus. In the Preſent of the Indicatiue all one yo Sumo. Imperfect yo Sumía, I did drench, yo Sumáva, I did ſumme vp. Firſt Perfect, yo Sumí, I haue drencht, tu Sumíſte, aquél Sumió, yo Sumé, I haue ſummed vp, tu Sumáſte, thou haſt ſummed vp, aquél Sumó, he hath ſummed vp, &c.

Of the third and laſt Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in IR *or* YR, *as* YR, in Italian *Ire* or *Andare*, in Latine *Ire*, to Goe.

yr-

Indicatiue mod.

	Spaniſh.	Italian.	Latine.	
Prez.	VOY,	*VO & VADO,*	*Eo, is, &c.*	I goe,
	Vás,	*Vái,*		thou
	Vá.	*Vá,*		goeſt, &c.
	Vámos,	*Andiámo,*		
	Váys,	*Andáte,*		
	Ván.	*Vánno.*		
Imperfect.	Y'va,	*Andáua,*	*Iham, &c.*	I did goe,
	yvas,	*Andáui,*		&c.
	yva,	*Andaua,*		
	yvamos,	*Andauámo,*		
	yvades,	*Andauáte,*		
	yvan.	*Andáuano.*		
First Perfect.	Fuy',	*Andái,*	*Iui, &c.*	I went,
	Fuiſte,	*Andáſti,*		&c.
	Fué,	*Andó,*		
	Fuímos,	*Andámmo,*		
	Fuiſtes,	*Andáſte,*		
	Fuéron.	*Andárano,*		

Second

second perfect.	He, as a, Hèmos, avéys, an,	Y'do.	Sono, Sei, è, Siámo, Sete, Sono,	Andato. Andati.	Iui, &c.	I haue gone, &c.
Plus-per.	Avía, Avía, Avía, Aviámos, Aviades, Avían,	Y'do.	Era, Eri, Era, Erauámo, Erauáte, E'rano,	Andato. Andati.	Iueram, &c	I had gone, &c.
Futur.	Yré, Yrás, Yrá, Yrémos, Yréys, Yrán.		Anderó, & Andró, Anderai, oz Andrái, Anderá, oz Andrá, Anderémo, oz Andremo, Anderéte, oz Andréte, Anderánno, oz Andranno.		Ibo, &c.	I shall oz will goe, &c.

Imperatiue mode.

Va, & Ve, Váya,	Va, Vada, Vadi,
Vámos,	Andiámo,
yd,	Andáte,
Váyan.	Vádano, & Vádino.

Vete, Vete, Get thee hence, Get thee hence.
With Authors this Verbe is sometime written with Y, sometimes with I.

Subiunctiue mod.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	Váya, Váyas, Váya, Vámos, Váys, Váyan.	Quando	Vada, Vada & Vadi. Vada & Vadi. Andiámo, Andiáte, Vádano & Vádino.	Cum	Eam, &c.	When I doe go &c.
Imper Como	Fuéra, Yría, fuésse, Fuéras, yrías, fuésses, Fuéra, yría, fuésse. Fuéramos, yríamos, fuéssemos, Fuérades, yríades, fuéssedes, Fuéran, yrían, fuéssen.	Quando	Andaſſi, Anderei, Anderia, Andaſſi, Anderesti, Andaſſe, Anderebbe, Anderia. Andáſſimo, Anderémmo, Andaſsie, Anderesse, Andáſſero, Anderebbono, Anderiano.	Cum	Irem, &c.	When I did goe, &c.
Perf. Como	áya, áyas, ya, áyamos, áys, áyan,	Y'do. Quando	Sia, Sij, Sia, Andato. Siámo, Siate, Siano, Andati.	Cum	Iuerim, &c.	When I haue gone, &c.
					Pluperf.	

Plu-perfect. Como	uviéra, oz uviéſſe, uviéras, oz uviéſſes, uviéra, oz uviéſſe, uviéramos, oz uviéſſemos, uviérades, oz uviéſſedes, uviéran, oz uviéſſen,	Y'do.	Quando Fóſſi, ſarei Foſſi, ſareſti Foſſe, ſarébbe Fóſſimo, ſarémmo Fóſte, ſareſte, Fóſſero, ſarébbono	Andato. Andati.	Cum Iuiſſem, &c.	When I had gone, &c.
First future. Como	Fuére, Fuéres, Fuére, Fuéremos, Fuéredes, Fuéren,				Cum Iuero, &c.	When I ſhall oz will goe, &c.
Second Futur. Como	uviére, oz avré, uviéres, oz avrás, uviére, oz avrá, uviéremos, oz avrémos, uviéredes, oz avréys, uviéren, oz avrán,	Y'do.	Quando Saró Sarái Sará Sarémo Saréte Saránno	Andato. Andati.	Cum Iuero, &c.	When I ſhall oz will go, &c.

Infinitiue mode Preſent tenſe.

Y'R] *Andare,*] *Ire,*] to Goe.

Preterperfect tenſe.

Aver y'do,] *Hauer andato,*] *Iuiſſe,*] to haue Gone.

Future tenſe.

Aver de yr, { *Douer Andare,* / *Hauer ad Andare,* / *Eſſer per Andare,* } *Iturum eſſe,*] to Goe hereafter.

Gerund.

Yéndo,] *Andando,*] *Eundo,*] In Going.

Supines.

Yr,] *Andare,*] *Itum,*] to Goe.

De ſer ydo,] *Eſſer Andato,*] *Itu,*] to be Gone.

Participle of the Preſent tenſe and Actiue voice.

El que va,] *Andante,*] *Euns,*] one Going.

Participle of the Preter tenſe and Paſſiue voice.

Y'do,] *Andato,*] Gone.

Of Verbes Impersonals.

The Spanish as the French and Italian Impersonals are of the manner of the Latines, which want the first and second person, and are declined onely in the third person throw-out all Moods and Tenses, as,

Indicatiue mood.

Present.	Ay,		There is.
Imperfect.	Avía,		There was.
1 Perfect.	úvo,		There was.
2 Perfect.	á,	Avído,	There hath bene.
Pluperfect.	avía,		There had bene.
Future.	Avrá,		There shall be, &c.
Imperat.	A'ya,		Let there be.

Subiunctiue mood.

Present.	Aya,	When there is.
Imperfect.	uviéra, avría, uviésse,	When there was.
Perfect.	aya Avido,	When there hath bene.
Pluperfect.	uviéra or uviésse Avído,	When there had bene.
Future.	uviére or Avra Avído.	When there shall be.

Note that the Spaniard almost continually vseth this Impersonall Ay as the French their *Il y ya*, in English There is, as by obseruing you shall most vsually finde, as also this third person Comple thus declined, of Complir the Infinitiue.

Indicatiue mood.

Present.	Cómple,	*Decet, Oportet,*	It beseemeth or behoueth.
Imperfect.	Complía,	*Decebat, Oportebat,*	It did beseeme.
1 Perfect.	Complió,	*Decuit, Oportuit,*	It hath beseemed, &c.
2 Perfect.	a Complído,	*Decuit, Oportuit,*	
Pluperfect.	Avía Complido,	*Decuerat, Oportuerat.*	
Future.	Complirá,	*Decebit, Oportebit.*	

And so throw the third person of the rest.

Indicatiue mood.

Present.	E's,	There is.
Imperfect.	éra,	There was.
1 Perfect.	fue,	There hath bene.
2 Perfect.	a sído,	There hath bene.
Pluperf.	avía Sído,	There had bene.
Future.	Será,	There shall be, &c.

And so decline forward, as in the Subiunctiue mood of the verbe Ser, Soy afore going in the third person onely.

Indicatiue mood.

Present.	Es menestér,	*Oportet,*	It behoueth.
Imperf.	era menestér,	*Oportebat,*	It did behoue.
1 Perfect.	fue menestér,	*Oportuit,*	It hath behoued.
2 Perfect.	a sído menestér,	*Oportuit,*	It hath behoued.
Pluperf.	avia sído menestér,	*Oportuerat,*	It had behoued.
Future.	avra menestér,	*Oportebit,*	It will behoue.

And so throw the rest, &c.

This verbe Impersonall Plazér declined.

Indicatiue mood.

Present.	Pláze,	It pleaseth.
Imperf.	Plazía,	It did please.
1 Perfect.	Plúgo,	It hath pleased.
2 Perfect.	a Plazido,	It hath pleased.
Pluperf.	avía Plazido,	It had pleased.
Future.	Plazerá,	It will please.
Imper.	Pléga,	Let it please.

Subiunctiue mood.

Present.	Pléga,	When it doth please.
Imperf.	Pluguiéra, Pluguiésse,	When it did please.
Perfect.	áya Plazído,	When it hath pleased.
Pluperf.	uviéra Plazído,	When it had pleased.
Future.	Pluguiére,	When it will please.

To forme an Impersonall of the Passiue voice, you must take this particle Se, and the third person of any verbe thus: which particle so added, makes a verbe Impersonall Passiue, as,

Present.	Se Dize,	*Si dice or diceſi,*	*Dicitur,*	It is said or spoken,
Imperf.	Se Dezía,	*Si dicéna or dicénaſi, &c.*	*Dicebatur, &c.*	It was said or spoken,
1 Perfect.	Se Dixo,			&c.
2 Perfect.	Se a Dicho,			
Pluperf.	S'avía Dicho,			
Future.	Se Dirá.			

Of Participles.

Participle of the Present tense.

IN Spanish, Participles of the Present tense and active signification, are made of the third person Present tense of the Indicatiue mood of the same Verbe, putting before it the Relatiue, El que, as El que Revéla, reuealing, Latine *Reuelans:* El que Entiénde, vnderstanding, in Latine *Intelligens:* El que oye, hearing, in Latine *Audiens.*

Participle of the Preter tense.

Participles of the Preter tense, and passiue signification end in ádo, ído, or ydo, which in the first coniugation are formed of the third person of the Present tense of the Indicatiue mood, by adding to do, as Revela, reveládo: Ama, amádo: Castiga, castigado: and in the second and third coniugation of the same Present tense, by changing e, into ído, and ydo, as Entiende, entendido: Lée, Leýdo: Crée, creýdo: Píde, pedído.

But for the Irregular (according to the nature of the word) without rule, as Factus, fecho, made: *Dictus,* Dícho, said, spoken.

Participle of the Future tense.

The Future tense with this Verbe Ha, or Espéra, and the Infinitiue of the Verbe, as El que ha, or Espera de revelár, Entendér, or oyr: *Reuelaturus, Intellecturus, Auditurus,* about to reueale, about to vnderstand, about to heare.

Present.

Participle of the Present tense, and actiue signification.

El que revéla, entiénde, óye, Latine, *Reuelans, Intelligens, Audiens,* Reuealing, vnderstanding, hearing.

Preter.

Participle of the Preter tense and passiue signification.

Reveládo, Entendído, oýdo, Latine *Reuelatus, Intellectus, Auditus,* Reuealed, vnderstood, heard.

Future.

Participle of the Future tense.

El que ha or espéra de Revelár, Entendér, oýr, Latine *Reuelaturus, Intellecturus, Auditurus,* to reueale hereafter, to vnderstand hereafter, to heare hereafter.

Of Aduerbs.

Aduerbs formed of Nounes of the Feminine gender in a. *Nota.*

I Haue handled before the foure parts of speech declined. Now come we to the other foure vndeclined, called Indeclinable, beginning first with the Aduerbs, whereof some in the Spanish tongue are formed of Nownes of the Feminine gender in a, as are almost all the Aduerbs of Qualitie, as Alta, high; Altaménte, highly; Graciosa, graciosaménte, graciously; Luenga, luengaménte; in Latine *Diu,* long: which manner of forming the Italian likewise obserueth, as *Gratiosamente, Longamente, Sauiamente,* so doth the French, making the word to end in *Ment,* as *Gratieusment, Longuement, Saggement.* Wherefore I think good to set downe the Aduerbs following and the rest: first, the Spanish, then Italian, after French, next Latine, and last English: euery one separated one from another with this crooked line thus,] Aduerbs some be

Of

of Qualitie.

Fielménte,] *Fidelmente,*] Fidelement,] *Fideliter,*] **Faithfully.**
Buénamente, oz bien] *Bene,*] Bien,] *Bene,*] **Well.**
Malaménte, oz mal,] *Male,*] Mauaiſement,] *Male,*] **Ill.**
De buéna gana] *Di buona voglia, Volontieri volontieremente,*} Volutiers, de bon cueur,] *Libenter,*] **Willingly.**

of Quantitie.

Mucho,] *Melto,*] Beaucoup, [*Multum vel Multo*] **Much.**
Poco,] *Poco,*] Peu,] *Parum vel Paululum,*] **Little.**
Múcho mas,] *Via piu,*] Beaucoup plus,] *Multo magis,*] **Much more.**
Mas,] *Piu,*] Plus,] *Magis,*] **More.**
Por de mas,] *Troppo,*] Trop,] *Nimis,*] **To much.**
Demaſiádo,] *Troppo*] Trop,] *Nimis,*] **To much.**

of Time.

Oy,] *Hóggi,*] Auiourd'huy,] *Hodie,*] **To day.**
Ayér] *Heri ieri,*] Hier,] *Heri*] **Yeſterday.**
Mañána,] *Domani,*] Demain,] *Cras,*] **To morrow.**
Antiér,] *Antieri,*] Deuant hier,] *Pridie,*] **The other day.**
El dia ſiguiente,] *Il ſeguente giorno,*] Le lendemain,] *Poſtridie,*] **The next day after to morrow.** *trás mañana*
Mucho ha,] *Molto fa,*] Deja long temps,] *Iamdiu,*] **Long ſince.**
Poco ha,] *Pocofa,*] Nagueres,] *Iamdudum,*] **A little ſince.**
Agóra,] *or, ora,*] aceſt heure,] *Iamiam,*] **Euen now.** *a hora*
Antes] *Inanzi,*] Deuant,] *Ante,*] **Before.** *despues. after*
Luégo,] *Preſto, Toſto,*] Soudainement,] *Illico, ſtatim,*] **Forthwith, by and by.**
Núnca,] *Giamai,*] Iamais,] *Nunquam,*] **Neuer.**
Quando,] *Quando,*] Quand,] *Quando,*] **When.**
Siémpre,] *Sempre*] Touſiours,] *Semper*] **Alwaies.**
Entónces,] *Al hora,*] Donques,] *Tunc,*] **Then.**
Miéntrás,] *Mentre,*] Cependant,] *Interim,*] **In the meane while.** *entre tanto*
Súbito,] *Subito,*] Soudainement,] *Subito,*] **Suddenly.**
Muchas vezés,] *Molte volte, Molte fiate,*] Fort ſouent,] *Sæpe,*] **Very often.**
Pocas vezés,] *Rade volte,*] Peu ſouent,] *Raro,*] **Seldome.**
Algunas vezes,] *Qual che volte, Qual che fiate,*} Quelquefois,] *Aliquando,*] **Sometimes.**

of Place.

AQVI',] *Qui, quiaci,*] Icy,] *Hîc, huc,*] **Here.**
Ay, allí, alla,] *Iui, la, cola, quiui,*] La audela,] *Illic,*] **There.**
A Donde,] *Doue, oue,*] Ou,] *Vbi quo,*] **Whither, where.**
De Donde,] *Onde, donde,*] Dont, d'ou,] *Vnde,*] **From whence.**
Acá,] *Di qua,*] Paricy,] *Hac,*] **This way.**
Acullá,] *Cola per coſta,*] Par dela,] *Iſtac, Iſtuc,*] **That way.**
De aquí,] *De qui, Quinci,*] D'icy,] *Hinc,*] **From hence.**
De allí, de allá,] *Indi, di la, Quindi,*] Dela,] *Illinc,*] **From hence.**
Dentro,] *Dentro, entro,*] Dedans,] *Intus,*] **Within.**
Fuéra,] *Fuori, di fuori,*] Hors, de hors,] *Foris, foras,*] **Without.**
Delánte,] *Inanzi,*] Deuant,] *Ante,*] **Before.**
Atrás,] *Dietro,*] Derrier,] *Poſt,*] **Behinde.** *de tras*
Aparte,] *De banda,*] al'eſcart,] *Separatim, ſeorſum,*] **Aside, a part, by it ſelfe.**
Arríba,] *Sopra, diſopra, In ſu, ſuſo,*] Enhaut,] *Surſum,*] **Aboue.**
Abáxo,] *In giu, giuſo, ſotto, diſotto,*] En bas,] *Deorſum,*] **Beneath.**
Cerca,] *Intorno, dattorno,*] Enuiron,] *Circiter,*] **About, nigh vnto, almoſt.**
Cábe, Iunto,] *Apreſſo, danicino,*] Preſt, aupres,] *Prope,*] **Neere vnto.**
Léxos,] *Lontano, di lunghi,*] Loin,] *Procul,*] **Far off.**
Encíma,] *Su, ſopra,*] Sur, deſſus,] *Super,*] **Vpon.**
So,] *Sotto, diſotto,*] Deſſoubs,] *Subter,*] **Under.**

of Affirming

SI, *as* Si Senor,] *Si, as Signore Si,*] Ouy, *as* ouy Mounſieur,] *Ita, ita Domine,*] **Yea, yea ſir,**
Ciérto, ciertaménte,] *Certo, certamente,*] Certes,] *Certè, certò,*] **Truly.**
En verdád, verdaderaménte,] *In verita, di vero, in vero,*] Vrayement, en verite, certainement,] *Verè,*] **Truly, in truth, verily.**
Tambien,] *Si bene, etiandio, ancor, anche,*] Si bien, ainſi, auſſi,] *Etiam, quoque,*] **alſo well. alſo.**
Antes,] *Pin toſto,* Pluſtoſt,] *Potius,*] **Rather.**

Of Denying.
NO,] *Non, no, ne,*] Non, neny, pas, point,] *Non, haud, minime,*] **Not.**
Náda, No nada,] *Niente, nulla,*] Rien,] *Nihil,*] **Nothing, nothing at all.**
Ni, Tam poco,] *Ne,*] Ni, ne,] *Neque,*] **Neither.**

Of numbring
VNA VEZ,] *Vna bolta, Vna fiata,*] Vne fois,] *Semel,*] **Once.**
Dos vezes,] *Due volte, Due fiate,*] Deuxfois,] *Bis,*] **Twice.**
Tres vezes,] *Tre volte, tre fiate,*] Troifois,] *Ter,*] **Thrice, &c. as in the Pronoune before of Numbers.**
Muchas vezes,] *Spesso volte, molte fiate,*] Beaucoup de fois,] *Sæpe,*] **Oftentimes.**
Pocas vézes,] *Rade volte,*] Rarement,] *Raro,*] **Seldome.**

Of Shewing [HEAQVI,] *Ecco,*] Voicy, voila,] *Ecce,*] **Behold.**

Of Encouraging. [EA, EA Pues,] *Su, corrággio,*] Sus, courage,] *Age, perge,*] **Goe to then.**

Of encreasing
MAS,] *Piu,*] Plus,] *Plus,*] **More.**
Mucho mas,] *Molto Piu, molto assai,*] Beaucoup plus,] *Multo magis,*] **Much more.**
De masiádo,] *Troppo, di souerchio,*] Trop,] *Nimium,*] **Too much.**

Of Diminishing.
MENOS,] *Meno,*] Moins,] *Paulo minus,*] **Lesse.**
Poco, a Poco,] *Poco, a Poco,*] Peu, a Peu,] *Paulatim,*] **By little and little.**
Passo,] *Pian, piano,*] Tout bellement, Petit a petit,] *Sensim,*] **Soft and faire.**

Of wishing.
OXALA,] *O Dio vaglia, Dio voleſſe,*] Pleuſt a Dieu,] *Vtinam,*] **Would to God, I pray God.**
O Si,] *O ſi, O ſi,*] Pleuſt a Dieu que,] *Vtinam,*] **Would to God, I pray God.**

Of Asking.
PORQVE?] *Perche?*] Pourquoy?] *Quare?*] **Why? Wherefore?**
Que?] *Che?*] Quoy?] *Quid?*] **What?**
Donde?] *Oue?*] Ou,] *Vbi, quo,*] **Where.**
Adonde,] *Doue,*] Ou,] *Quo,*] **whether.**
De Donde,] *Onde,*] D'ou, dont,] *Vnde,*] **From whence.**
Quando?] *Quando?*] Quand?] *Quando?*] **When.**

Of doubting.
QVIÇA',] *Forſe, a caſo,*] Fortuitement,] *Fortaſſis,*] **Perhaps.**
Porventura,] *Peruentura,*] Parauenture,] *Fortaſſe,*] **Peraduenture, Perhaps.**

Of Order.
DESPVE'S,] *Poi, dipoi, Dapoi, doppo,*] A pres, depuis,] *Poſt,*] **After.**
Allènde de ésto,] *Oltra a cio, oltra a queſto,*] Outre ce, d'aduantage,] *Præterea,*] **Furthermore.**
Finalménte,] *Alla fine,*] En fin, Finablement,] *Tandem,*] **At length.**

Of Likenesse.
CO'MO,] *Comme,*] Comme,] *Sicut, velut,*] **As.**
Assi,] *coſi,*] Ainſi,] *Ita, ſic,*] **So.**

Of Chance. [ACASO, Por dicho,] *A caſo,*] Fortuitement,] *Fortuito,*] **By chance, by hap.**

Of Comparison.
MAS,] *Piu,*] Plus,] *Plus,*] **More.**
Ménos,] *Meno,*] Moins,] *Minus,*] **Lesse.**
Mucho mas,] *Via piu, Assai piu,*] Beaucoup, d'auantage,] *Multo magis,*] **Much more.**
Mucho ménos,] *Molto meno,*] Beaucoup moins,] *Multo minus,*] **Much lesse.**
Méjór,] *Meglíore,*] Mellieur,] *Melius,*] **Better.**
Peór,] *Peggiore,*] Pis,] *Peior,*] **Worse.**
Todo del mundo,] *Piu del mondo,*] Tout le mond,] *Maximè,*] **Chiefely.**

Gathering together. [IVNTO, Iuntaménte,] *Inſieme,*] Enſemble,] *Simul,*] **Together.**

Severing. APARTE,] *Seperatamente,*] A l'eſcart,] *Seperatim, ſeorſim,*] **A funder.**

Chusing.
SMAS Ay'na,] *Piu toſto,*] Pluſtoſt,] *Potius,*] **Rather.**
Mucho mas,] *Molto meglio,*] Beaucoup mieux,] *Potius,*] **Much Rather.**

Contrariety.
TODA véz,] *Tutta via,*] Toutefois,] *Tamen,*] **Notwithstanding.**
Aúnque,] *Come, che, Etiandio che, Anchor che,*] Encore,] *Etiamsi,*] **Although.**

With-

Withdrawing. ALO Ménos,] *Alméno, almánco,*] Au moins,] At the leaſt.
Sólo,] *Solo,*] Seul,] *Solium,*] Onely.
Porque,] *Pur, accioche, che,*] Pourceque,] *Propterea,*] For that.

Of a Coniunction.

A Coniunction is that which knitteth and ioyneth parts of ſpæch together, and is with the Spaniard almoſt in the ſame manner as the Latine, ſaning they haue not ſo many, but yet ſome are

Of coupling, as
Y, and E,] *e,*] et,] *et,*] And.
Como,] *Comme,*] Comme,] *Vt,*] As.
Tambien,] *Ancor, Ancho, Etiandio,*] Si bien, ainſi, auſſi,] *Etiam, Quoque,*] Alſo.

Nota. Note that E properly is not a Spaniſh Coniunction, but onely vſed for the Y, when the word following beginneth with a Y, becauſe two YY, ſhould not come together, La ley e la Juſticia, and not La ley y la Juſticia, but otherwiſe alwaies vſe Y.

Of Diſioyning.
Ni,] *Ne,*] Ne,] *Nec, Neque,*] Neither.
O,] *O, ouero,*] Ou,] *Aut, Vt, Vel, Seu, Siue,*] Either.

Of Cauſing. [PORQVE,] *Accioche, Perciochè,*] Pourceque] *Propterea quod,*] For that, wherefore.

Of Conditioning.
SI,] *Se,*] Si,] *Si,*] If.
Dado que,] *Se coſi,*] Si auſſi,] *Si ita,*] If ſo.

Of Excepting.
SINO,] *Senon,*] Sinon,] *Niſi,*] Except, if not.
Mas,] *Ma,*] Mais,] *Qum,*] But.
Otraménte,] *Altramente,*] Autrement,] *Alioquin,*] Otherwiſe.

Of Diminiſhing. [ALOMENOS,] *Alméno, Almanco,*] Au moins,] *Saltem,*] At leaſt.

[AVNQVE,] *Ancorche, Quantunche, Benche, Etiandio,* } Encore,] *Etſi, quamquam, Quamuis,* } Although.

[TODA via,] *Tuttavia, Tuttavolta, Nondimeno, Nondimanco, Nientidemeno,* } Toutefois,] *Tamen, eſto,*] *nevertheleſs* Notwithſtanding.

A Prepoſition.

Prepoſition. The Spaniſh hath the ſame vſe of Prepoſitions as the Latines haue, ſometimes by compoſition with another word, as Bolvér, to turne; Rebolvér, to ouer-turne: Hazér, to doe, Rehazér, to renew, &c. Sometime by appoſition (as the Latines doe) by putting the Prepoſition before the Noune, as Ala corte, to the Court: Por el Rey, for the King: En la yglésia, in the Church.

Nota. Note that this Prepoſition De, or Des, alwaies makes the word that it is ioyned with, of a quite contrary ſignification, as Hazér, to doe: Deſhazér, to vndoe: Atár, to tie or binde: Deſatar, to vntie: Canſado, wearie: Deſcanſado, reſting: Dicha, happineſſe: Deſdicha, vnhappineſſe, miſfortune: And ſo in the French, *Faire*, to doe: *Desfaire*, to vndoe: *Lier*, to binde, *Deslier*, to vnbinde, &c. Prepoſitions of the Spaniſh thus,

A,] *A,*] Ad,] *Ad,*] To, as A fe, a la fe,] *A fede, A fe,*] Par ma foy,] *Per fidem,*] By my troth.
De,] *Di, de da,*] De, du,] *De,*] Of or from,] as De la corte,] *De la corte,*] Du palais,] From the Court.
Para,] *Per,*] Pour,] *Propter,*] For, as Para mi,] *Per me,*] Pour moy,] *Propter me,*] For me.
Por,] *Per,*] Par,] *Per,*] For, by or thorow, as Por mi vida,] *Per mia vita,*] Par ma vie,] *Per vitam,*] By my life.

Contra,] *Contra, Incontra,*] Contre,] *Contra,*] **Againſt.**
Contra el eſtado,] *Contra il ſtato,*] Contre l'eſtat,] *Contra ſtatum,*] **Againſt the eſtate.**
CABE] *Preſſo, Appreſſo,*] Preſt, aupres,] *Prope,*] **Nære, as** Cabe la ciudád] *Appreſſo la citta,*] Apres de la citte,] *Prope vrbem,*] **Nære the citie.**
FRONTERO,] *Rimpetto, Dirimpetto,* } Vis a vis,] *E regione,*] **Ouer againſt.**
HASTA,] *Fino, Sino, Infino, Inſino,* } Iuſques,] *Vſque,*] **Vntill.**
HA'ZIA,] *Ver, verſo,*] Enuers,] *Verſus,*] **Towards.**
SOBRE,] *Sopra, Diſopra, In ſu,* } Sur, Sus, } *Super,*] **Upon.**
ENCI'MA,] *In il pu alto,*] En la ſommette,] *In vertice,*] **Upon the top.**
SO,] *Sotſo, diſotto, Giu,*] De ſoubs,] *Subter,*] **Under.**
ENTRE,] *Fra, Infra,*] Entre,] *Inter,*] **Betweene.**
ATRAS,] *Dietro,*] Derrier,] *Pone,*] **Behinde.**
ADELANTE,] *Dinanzi, Inanzi,*] Deuant,] *Ante,*] **Before.**
Cerca, Acerca,] *Circa, Intorno, Attorno,*] Enuiron,] *Circum, Circa,*] **About.**
Fuera,] *Fuori,*] Hors, dehors,] *Foris, Foras,*] **Without doores.**
Dentro,] *Dentro,*] Dans, dedans,] *Intus,*] **Within.**
Con,] *Con,*] Auec,] *Cum,*] **With.**
Sin,] *Senza,*] Sans,] *Sine,*] **without.**
Deſde,] **From or ſince, as** Deſde la muerte, &c. **From, or ſince the death, &c.**

Theſe following, are vſed with the Preposition De, **with them, as**

Aquende de la caſa,] *Di qua de la caſa,*] Par deçà de la maiſon,] *Ex hac parte domus,*] **On this ſide the houſe.**
Allende,] *Di la,*] Par de la,] *Ex altera parte,*] **On the other ſide.**
Al deredór, or Entorno,] *Intorno, Attorno,*] Enuiron,] *Circum, Circa,*] **About.**

Of an Interiection.

AN Interiection declareth a ſudden paſſion of the minde. The Spaniards vſe not ſo often Interiections or ſudden paſſions of the minde; neither in their ſpæch nor writing, as doth the French, or Italian, and yet they haue theſe following: **Some be of**

Mirth or Reioycing. [O Bueno,] *Oh bene,*] He bien, he dea,] *Euax, vah,*] **O well.**
Laughing. [Hi, hi, hi, or Ha, ha, ha,] *Ah, ah,*] Ah, eh,] *Ha, ha, he,*] **Ha, ha, he.**
Wondring. O Ieſus, or Vala me Dios, } *O vh, vh,*] Oh, oh,] *Pape,*] **O Jeſus, good Lord helpe me.**
Grieuing. [AY, ay,] *Aih, ah, ahime,*] Las, olas, helas, ach,] *Heu, hei,*] **Alas, out alas.**

Of Syntaxis.

Definition of Syntaxis. *Syntaxis* **is a due coupling together of Speech, according to the right Rules of Grammar, which the beſt Authors, both Ancient and Moderne, haue ſtill vſed in writing and ſpeaking.**

Syntaxis, of the Greeke word σὺν, **which is** *Con,* **and** τάσσω, *ordino, quaſi coordinatio,* **which is conſtruction or agreement.**

But for that the Spaniſh (as the Italian and French) being derived from the Latine (as before ſaid, and ſtill keepeth as great affinitie as Siluer and Tin, both proceeding (as Alchimiſts ſay) from Quickſiluer, or as no one can gainſay from the mother earth, or as a different Plant grafted on a ſtrange ſtock or tree: It muſt neceſſarily be ordered by many Rules of the Latine, which here to repeat were loſt labour and in vaine, as hath ſeemed to the moſt part of all thoſe learned, that of any theſe vulgar languages haue written: Finiſhing their Grammars at the end of the eight parts of ſpeech, and leauing this quite out: which order I haue obſerued, referring the Latine Reader to the Rules of the Latine Syntaxis for this part of Grammar, and other to due obſeruation in reading good Authors: wiſhing increaſe to both, to their owne contents, and my ſelfe hereby to haue furthered both, to mine owne chiefe deſire.

FINIS.

I Haue for the Learners vſe deſirous of the tongue, read ouer diuers Authors, gathering out of them the hard Phraſes and manner of ſpeech, the vncouth ſayings, together with ſome Prouerbs, as they fall in their places (which are the difficultie of the tongue) and explained them in Engliſh, commonly ſetting downe firſt the Engliſh, word for word as the Spaniſh is, then this *i.* for Latine, *id eſt*, that is to ſay, for the ſenſe and meaning, then the line and the leafe of the book, that by theſe the Learner may the better iudge of their like when he meeteth with them. For the leafe I ſet downe *fol.* and *a.* ſignifieth the firſt ſide of the leafe, and *b.* the ſecond, *lin.* ſignifieth what line, and the figure after *fol.* telleth the leafe, and *lin.* what line it is. If you finde *pag.* it is to finde what page of the booke. If you ſee 1. *part.* it is for the firſt volume or part of the book, and 2. *part.* for the ſecond, &c.

Words, Phraſes, Sentences and Prouerbs out of DIANA of Monte Mayor in 16. Printed at Antwerp, 1580.

Los de mas. *fol.* 3. *b. lin.* 14. The reſt.

Las hóras que ſe ſobrávan. *fol.* 4. *b. lin.* 2. The houres which remained, or the reſt of the houres.

Tomándo a vézes. *fol.* 4. *b. lin.* 6. Taking by fits or turnes.

Paſſár por el pienſamiénto. *fol.* 4. *b. lin.* 14. *and* 7. *a. lin.* 25. *and* 26. *b.* 8. To enter into the minde or thought.

Tam póco le dáva péna. *fol.* 4. *b. lin.* 17. Neither did it grieue or trouble him.

A vueſtro ſálvo. *fol.* 6. *b. lin.* 17. Your ſelfe being ſafe, or without your owne danger.

Como los uviſte a las mános? *fol.* 10. *b. lin.* 5. How came they to your hands? or how came you by them?

Por tu vida. *fol.* 10. *b. lin.* 21. By thy life, *i.* I pray thee heartily.

Tomár de córo. *fol.* 10. *b. lin.* 23. To take by quire, *i.* To haue by memorie, heart, or without booke.

Favoreſcér me a mi. *fol.* 11. *b. lin.* 5. *and* Me moviéra a mi. *fol.* 2. *a. lin.* 8. To fauour me, and did moue me. Here the Spaniſh vſeth two accuſatiue caſes after the verbe, both of the perſon: and not as the Latine, one of the perſon, and another of the thing.

Deſpues que te fuiſte. *fol.* 11. *b. lin.* 21. After thou wenteſt.

Yo fuý, tu fuyſte, aquél fué, nos fuy'mos, fuyſtes, fuéron. I went, thou wenteſt, he went, we went, ye went, they went. This Fuy, fuyſte, commeth of the Infinitiue mood y'r, to go, and the verb ſame Fuy, fuiſte, fue, &c. commeth of the Infinitiue mood Sér, to be: but looke back in the Grammar and compare the two verbes together.

De ay a un póco. *fol.* 11. *b. lin.* 28. A prettie while after.

Que es del? *fol.* 12. *a. lin.* 20. Where is he? What is become of him?

Quando ſe póne el Sol. *fol.* 13. *a. lin.* 8. When the ſunne ſets.

Fuéra de mi, fuéra de ti, fuéra de ſi. *fol.* 13. *b. lin.* 14. Beſides my ſelfe, beſides thy ſelfe, beſides himſelfe, or Out of my wit, out of thy wit, out of his wit.

Tén púnto. *fol.* 13. *b. lin.* 24. Stay, hold, ſtop, Giue me leaue a little.

Le va bien, le va mal *fol.* 15. *a. lin.* 7. It goes well with him, it goes ill with him. He is well, he is ill.

Múcho a. A good while ſince.

Mucho avía, mucho úvo, mucho avrá. *fol.* 17. *a. lin.* 4. It was a good while agoe, it hath beene a good while ſince, it ſhall or will be long agoe.

Póco ha, or Póco ſa. A little while agoe, or a little ſince.

Poco avía, Poco úvo, Poco avrá. It was a little ſince, it hath beene but a little ſince, it ſhall or will be but a little while agoe.

Muchos dias acá, Pocos dias acá. *fol.* 17. *a. lin.* 7. Many daies ſince, a few daies ſince.

Mucho tiempo há, Poco tiempo há. A good while a goe, a little while agoe.

Grandes dias há, Pocos dias há. A great while agoe, a few daies paſt.

Coſa en la vida. *fol.* 17. *a. lin.* 12. Any thing in the world.

Hazér cáſo. *fol.* 17. *b. lin.* 21. To eſteeme of, to make matter of.

Muchos ay, or Ay muchos. *fol.* 20. *a. lin.* 6. There are many.

Que os téngo dicho. *fol.* 20. *a. lin.* 29. Which I haue told you.

Quíſo mi ventura. *pag.* 21. *a. lin.* 11. My fortune would haue it ſo.

Que de oro no les llevára ventája. *fol.* 21. *a. lin.* 20. *verbatim.* That the vantage of gold did not carrie it away from them, *i.* Gold did not exceed them in brightneſſe.

Yr a la máno. *pag.* 21. *b. lin.* 28. *verbatim.* To goe to ones hand, *i.* To ſtop, to ſtay, to let or to hinder one from doing any thing.

Deſdichado de mi. *fol.* 22. *b. lin.* 6. *verbatim.* Wretched of me, *i.* Wretch that I am, vnhappy creature I, woe is me, wretch that I am.

No te háze mucho al cáſo. *fol.* 22. *b. lin.* 11. It makes not much matter to thee, it concernes thee not much.

De véras. *fol.* 22. *b. lin.* 20. In earneſt.

De burlas. *fol.* 22. *b. lin.* 20. In ieſt.

Toda via. *fol.* 23. *a. lin.* 2. Notwithſtanding.

Hazér de induſtria. *fol.* 23. *a. lin.* 22. To doe of ſet purpoſe.

Plégue a Dios. *fol.* 23. *b. lin.* 5. I would to God.

De ay a ocho dias. *fol.* 24. *b. lin.* 6. Eight daies hence.

No ay coſa en la vida. *fol.* 25. *a. lin.* 14. There is nothing in the world.

Aſſi puſo per óbra. *fol.* 26. *b. lin.* 11. So he did put it in practiſe.

Váyan ſoſpiros a cuéntos. *fol.* 10. *a. lin.* 21. Let ſighes goe by millions.

Y quiéra Dios que, &c. *fol.* 40. *b. lin.* 4. And would to God that, &c.

Ambos a dos. *fol.* 46. *b. lin.* 5. Both.

Fuéra de ſi. *fol.* 47. *b. lin.* 14. Beſides himſelfe, out of his wits.

Venir a las mános. *fol.* 47. *b. lin.* 16. To come to blowes or fight.

Como en ello le fuera la vida. *fol.* 48. *a. lin.* 11. As if thereon his life lay.

A buéltas della. *fol.* 48. *b. lin.* 13. Together therewith.

Mal aya a aquel. *fol.* 49. *a. lin.* 13. Woe be vnto him.

Ponér el negócio a las manos. *fol.* 50. *b. lin.* 24. To bring the matter to blowes or fight.

Que en otra coſa no entendia ſino en, &c. *fol.* 51. *b. lin.* 24. *verbatim.* Which in any other matter vnderſtood not, *i.* which thought on nothing elſe but, &c.

Se dexó dormir. *fol.* 52. *a. lin.* 25. *verbatim.* Let himſelfe or herſelfe ſleepe, *i.* fell aſleepe.

No ſe qual me créa. *fol.* 53. *b. lin.* 19. I know not which I may beleeue.

Devio ſér. *fol.* 53. *b. lin.* 25. *verbatim.* It ought to be, *i.* it could not be otherwiſe.

Báſta lo hécho. *fol.* 54. *a. lin.* 16. It ſufficeth that it is done. Baſta lo dicho, it is enough that is once ſpoken of, or it needs no more words.

Como ſupo callár. *fol.* 54. *a. lin.* 19. How ſhe knew to hold her tongue, how well ſhe could be mute, and not anſwer a word.

Ni por penſamiénto en ella. *fol.* 54. *b. lin.* 13. By no meanes.

Querérme mas que a si. *fol.* 55. *b. lin.* 1. To loue me more or better then himſelfe, or herſelfe.

No es de caualléro *fol.* 55. *b. lin.* 26. It is not the part of a Gentleman.

Tenér en múcho, Tenér en poco. *fol.* 56. *a. lin.* 2. To eſteeme much, or to ſet much by, to ſet little by, or eſteeme little.

Y quien ſe lo dixo, Se lo ſúpo encareſcér de manera. *fol.* 56. *a. lin.* 25. And he that told it, could tell how to augment and amplifie it in ſuch ſort.

Aſſi púſe por obra. *fol.* 56. *b. lin.* 24. So I put it in practiſe, or ſet it a worke.

Aſſi me fue derécha a la córte. *fol.* 57. *a. lin.* 3. And ſo I went ſtraight to the Court.

Coſas no poco guſtóſas de oýr. *fol.* 57. *a. lin.* 5. *verbatim.* Things not little taſtfull to heare, *i.* Things not a little delightfull to heare.

En la boz, or en la hábla le conoſcý. *fol.* 57. *a. lin.* 25. I knew him by his voice of ſpeech.

La múſica dáva a otra no a mi *fol.* 58. *a. lin.* 20. The muſick plaied to another, and not to me.

Le déva mucho. *fol.* 61. *a. lin.* 9. *verbatim.* Oweth him much, *i.* he is much beholding to him.

E'ſta vellaca de auſéncia deſháze las coſas. *fol.* 61. *a. lin.* 15. This Raskals abſence doth vndoe all.

No avrá ningúna que no ſe piérde por vos. *fol.* 61. *b. lin.* 3. There will be none which is not loſt in loue for you, *i.* which will not be ready to runne mad for you.

Moça bonita, or bonica. *fol.* 61. *b. lin.* 5. A good wench, a fine trull, maid or girle.

Dár léxos de la verdád. *fol.* 62. *b. lin.* 13. To be wide or farre off from the truth.

Pareſcér me hýa, or ia. *fol.* 63. *a. lin.* 12. It did ſeeme vnto me. This manner of ſpeech in Spaniſh, is by the figure *Epentheſis*, which is the putting in of a letter or ſyllable in the middle of a word, as in this Pareſcér me hýa, for Pareceria me, It did ſeeme to me.

Dár vna palmáda. *fol.* 63. *a. lin.* 13. To giue ones ſelfe a pat or blow on the breaſt, or elſe where in ſigne of wondring.

Grangeár favóres. *fol.* 66. *b. lin.* 5. To hoord vp fauours.

Perdído per amores. *fol.* 67. *a. lin.* 22. Loſt for loue, mad in loue.

Si fuéſſe ſervído. *fol.* 68. *a. lin.* 9. If he pleaſed, or liked well of.

Vn deſmáyo con que avía dado el álma. *fol.* 68. *a. lin.* 17. A ſwouning or traunce, with which he had giuen vp the ghoſt.

Pluguiéra a Dios. *fol.* 68. *b. lin.* 12. Would to God.

Llegár al álma. *fol.* 69. *a. lin.* 3. To enter into the ſoule, to grieue at heart.

Tomó

Tomó la mano de reſpondélle. *fol. 69. a. lin. 9.* Tooke vpon her to anſwer her, or ſtood vp before the company to anſwer her.

Puſiéron la méſa. *fol. 71. a. lin. 15.* They couered the table.

El ſol ſe pone. *fol. 72. a. lin. 5.* The ſunne was ſet.

Que áya ſido parte. *fol. 74. a. lin. 20.* Which hath beene the cauſe.

Echár lo en burlas. *fol. 76. a. lin. 5. verbatim.* To caſt it off in ieſting, *i.* To ieſt it out.

A tódos hazía ventája. *fol. 76. a. lin. 16.* He did excell all, he did exceed or ouer paſſe all.

Rogándo muy encareſcidaménte. *fol. 76. b. lin. 8.* Requeſting very earneſtly, very inſtantly.

Fulána tiene buen áyre, Fulíno, es çapateadór. *fol. 79. a. lin. 23. & 24.* Such a one hath a good grace or countenance, ſuch a one is dauncer of a Jigge.

Pueſto en tanta obligación. *fol. 80. a lin. 20.* Being ſo much beholding or bound.

Echáda a la ſombra, Echádo a la cáma. *fol. 82. b. lin. 2.* Laid in the ſhadow, caſt on the bed.

Tuviéſſe por bien. *fol. 82. b. lin. 8. verbatim.* Did hold for good, *i.* Thought well of, or tooke in good part.

Mal áya amór, ſu arco y ſu ſaéta. *fol. 83. a. lin. 11.* The deuill take loue, his bow and his ſhaft.

Paſſallos hiá, or ía. *fol. 83. b. lin. 7.* I would paſſe them ouer. This ſpeech by the figure *Epenthеſis*, which is a putting betweene of a letter or ſyllable in the middeſt of a word, as Paſſállos hía, for Paſſaría los, I would paſſe them ouer. Alſo in Paſſallos, another figure called *Antiſtoichon*, which is a writing one letter for another by changing R of the Infinitiue mood into L, a thing moſt vſuall in the Spanish, as hœre Paſſallos for Paſſár los, ſo Hablállos, for Hablar los, to ſpeake vnto them: Vellos, for Ver los, to ſee them: Dezillos, for Dezir los, to tell them: Oylles, or Oyllos, or Oyr les, or los, to heare them.

Aviendo ydo quanto média legua. *fol. 89. a. lin. 21.* Hauing gone about halfe a league.

Se fue ſu paſſo a páſſo. *fol. 84. a. lin. 6.* Went very ſoft and leiſurely.

Los demas de los dias. *fol. 86. b. lin. 2.* The reſt of the daies.

Y en las manos ſendos vaſos héchos a la Romána. *fol. 90. b. lin. 3.* And in their hands each one a ſeuerall veſſell made after the Romane faſhion.

Meſas pueſtas. *fol. 91. a. lin. 21.* Tables couered or laid.

Piédras engaſtádas. *fol. 91. b. lin. 1.* Stones enchaced.

Alçár, or quitár la méſa. *fol. 91. b. lin. 4.* To take vp the table.

Viſtiéron a Feliſmena, vna ropa y baſquiña de fina grána, recamádas de oro de canutillo, y aljófar, vncuéra, y mangas de tela de plata. *fol. 94. a. lin. 5.* They apparelled *Feliſmena* with a gowne and peticote of fine ſcarlet colour imbroidered with imboſt or raiſd gold and pearle, a caſſocke and ſlœues of cloth of ſiluer.

Eſcofión de redezílla. *fol. 94. a. lin. 14.* A coife of net worke.

Las paré des eran labrádas de obra Moſáyca. *fol. 94. b. lin. 16.* The wals were wrote Jewiſh worke or Turkie worke, without Images.

Duarte. *fol. 98. b. lin. 19.* Edward.

Miráldе bien. *fol. 101. a. lin. 1.* Behold him well, by the figure *Metatheſis*, which is a changing places of letters, for Mirádle very common in the Spaniſh, in the Imperatiue mood, the ſecond perſon, plurall number, as Leeldo for Leed lo, Reade yœ it: Dezildo, for Dezid lo, Tell him that: or Dezildes for Dezid les, Tell them: ſo Miralda for Mirád la, Behold her, Miráldas, for Mirád las, Behold them. *fol. 103. a. lin. 3.*

O'jos verdes y raſgádos. *fol. 103. a. lin. 28.* Faire and great eies.

Deſde el bórea al auſtro. *fol. 104. a. lin. 22.* From the North to the South.

En quanto ſe hazía hora de cenár ſe fuéron a vna alaméda. *fol. 105. a. lin. 16.* And while ſupper time came they went to a groue of Poplars.

Mediante la quel. *fol. 109. a. lin. 24.* By meanes whereof.

Gentíl hombre y bien talládo. *fol. 110. a. lin. 13.* A proper man and well ſhaped, and not for as Engliſh men call Gentleman.

Cava lo rúcio rodádo. *fol. 110. a. lin. 15.* A horſe dapple gray.

Traýa en la cinta vn alfánje. *fol. 110. a. lin. 19.* He caried at his girdle a Turkie ſword.

Traýa en el bráço yſquierdo. *fol. 110. a. lin. 24.* He caried on his left arme.

Bolvér ſobre ſi. *fol. 110. b. lin. 21.* To come to ones ſelfe as out of a traunce, aſtoniſhment, or the like.

Tocár un cuerno. *fol. 111. a. lin. 16. verbatim.* To touch, *i.* To winde a horne.

Llevár el camíno de los compañéros. *fol. 111. a. lin. 19. verbatim.* To carrie the way of his fellowes, *i.* To take the ſame way, to be ſerued with the ſame ſauce, to drinke of the ſame cup.

Túvo lo en mucho. *fol. 113. a. lin. 9.* He much eſteemed it.

De ay algunos dias. *fol. 116. a. lin. 18.* From hence a few daies.

Tenérme campo. *fol. 119. a. lin. 5. verbatim.* To hold me field, *i.* To be able to ſtand with me, or fight with me.

Hazér campo. *verbatim.* To make field, *i.* To combat, to fight.

No ſe lo que hará de mi. *fol. 119. a. lin. 18.* I know not what ſhall become of me.

Tenéd

Tenéd entendído. *fol.* 126. *b. lin.* 2. *verbatim.* Hold vnderſtood, *i.* Vnderſtand.
Ambas a dos. *fol.* 126. *b. lin.* 27. Both.
Pléga a Dios. *fol.* 130. *b. lin.* 24. I would to God.
Por lo poco que ſe dáva por el. *fol.* 133. *a. lin.* 23. For the little eſteeme he made of him.
No ſe me da náda. *verbatim.* It giues nothing to me, *i.* I care not.
Avrá como cinco o ſeys méſes. *fol.* 147. *a. lin.* 3. It ſhall be ſome fiue or ſix moneths.
Coſa en que tan poco te yva. *fol.* 149. *a. lin.* 19. A thing which ſo little did import thee.
Me a dádo de mano. *fol.* 150. *a. lin.* 26. He hath taken his leaue of me.
Fálda de unas montañas. *fol.* 157. *b. lin.* 13. *verbatim.* The ſkirt, *i.* The ſide or hanging of an hill.
Vino a dár en un boſque muy grande, de verdes aliſos y azebúches aſſaz popládo. *fol.* 158. *a. lin.* 2. He came to light into a wood very great, ſufficiently ſtored with greene Hallowes and wilde Oliues.
Y de ſúbito fue a dár con los ojos en una muy hermoſa ciudád, que deſde de lo alto de una ſierra, que de frente eſtáva. *fol.* 158. *a. lin.* 6. And vpon a ſuddaine he eſpied a faire Citie from the top of a Mountaine, which was right against them.
Se fué ſu paſſo a paſſo por una ſenda que júnto al rio yva házia la parte. *fol.* 158. *b. lin.* 6. He went faire and ſoft in a path which lead neere the riuer toward that part, &c.
Sobre las cabeças, tenían ſendas guirnaldas de verde yedra. *fol.* 158. *b. lin.* 18. Vpon their heads they had each of them ſeuerall garlands of greene Iuie.
Con cierto deſdén y un dár de mano. *fol.* 160. *a. lin.* 12. With a certaine diſdaine and putting from with the hand.
Dize pues que ſu mugér es finada que me caſe con el? *fol.* 160. *a. lin.* 24. Saith he, ſeeing that his wife is dead, that I marrie with him?
Paréd en médio bivir. *fol.* 190. *b. lin.* 28. To liue at the next wall, but one wall betweene.
Parár mientes. *fol.* 193. *a. lin.* 21. To marke, to heed.
Plazér acabádo. *fol.* 226. *a. lin.* 12. Complete, or full ioy or pleaſure quite ended.

Diana de Monte Mayor 2. part.

Encaminár obras a perſonas de luſtre. *fol.* 2. *a. lin.* 5. To direct workes to perſons of fame.
Si Dios fuére ſervído. *fol.* 2. *b. lin.* 7. *verbat.* If God ſhall be ſerued, *i.* If it ſhall pleaſe God.
De mi grádo jamas entendiéra ſino en ſolo loáros. *fol.* 3. *a. lin.* 7. By my good will I would neuer doe any thing elſe but praiſe you.
Vaya fuera toda arrogáncia. *fol.* 3. *b. lin.* 12. All pride ſet aſide.
Como a cada uno complía. *fol.* 7. *a. lin.* 2. As was meet for euery one.
No les comple yrſe. *fol.* 7. *b. lin.* 20. It is not meet they goe.
Con el ſi del matrimónio. *fol.* 8. *a. lin.* 26. With the anſwering to the miniſter yea at ꝑ mariage.
Vâmonos. *fol.* 10. *a. lin.* 10. Let vs goe, for Vamos nos.
Dexémonos. *fol.* 19. *a. lin.* 22. Let vs leaue, for Dexémos nos.
Amatár la ſed. *fol.* 10. *a. lin.* 20. To quench thirſt.
Por una cuéſta abaxo. *fol.* 11. *b. lin.* 11. Downehill.
A vézes. *fol.* 21. *a. lin.* 1. By turnes, by fits.
O vala me Dios. *fol.* 22. *a. lin.* 6. God help me.
Pluguiéra a Dios. *fol.* 22. *a. lin.* 17. I would to God.
Dado que. *fol.* 22. *b. lin.* 21. Grant that, ſuppoſe that.
Mercéd ſeñaláda. *fol.* 28. *b. lin.* 26. A notable courteſie.
El traydór del Cupído. *fol.* 36. *b. lin. penultima.* The traitor Cupid.
Tenér en mucho. *fol.* 38. *b. lin.* 1. To eſteeme much of.

Words, Phraſes, Sentences and Prouerbs, out of *Celeſtina* in 8.

Printed at Antwerp En la oficina Plantiniana,

Anno 1595.

De mas. *pag.* 1. *lin.* 5. Ouer and aboue, beſides, moreouer.
Recebído tienen. *pag.* 3. *lin.* 6. *verbatim.* They hold receiued, *i.* They haue receiued.
Tenér la firma del autor. *pag.* 4. *lin.* 21. To haue the Authors name to it.
Leeldo. *pag.* 8. *lin.* 9. Reade it by the figure *Metatheſis*, which is a changing of places of letters, very common in the Spaniſh, in the ſecond perſon plurall of the Imperatiue mood, as this Leeldo for Leed lo, as Caſtigaldo, chaſtiſe him, for Caſtigad lo, Pedilde, require of him, for Pedid le, Oylde, heare him, for Oyd le.
A tódo correr de véis de huír. *pag.* 10. *lin.* 11. *verbatim.* With all running away you ought to auoid, *i.* with all haſte poſſible to run or ſhun.

En

En quien quépa eſta differéncia. *pag.* 17. *lin.* 14. In whom may be contained or found this difference.

Conſéja tras de fuego. *pag.*13.*lin.* 3. A tale by the fires ſide, an old wiues tale.

Ofrecído tenér. *pag.* 22. *lin.* 13. *verbatim.* To hold offered, *i.* To haue offered.

Vete, vete de ay. *pag.* 23. *lin.* 18. Get thee hence, get thee hence.

Abatióſe el girafalte. *pag.*23. *lin.* 28. The Gerfaulcon bated.

Los Diablos te gánen. *pag.* 24. *lin.* 1. The Deuill take thee.

Que coſa es? *pag.* 24. *lin.* 20. What is the matter?

Dexárle he? *pag.* 25. *lin.* 2. Shall I leaue him?

Matárſe ha. *pag.*25. *lin.* 3. He is to kill himſelfe, or he will kill himſelfe.

Desbráve, Madúre. *pag.*25. *lin.* 15. Let him pacifie or calme himſelfe, let him ripen or come to a head.

Si delante me tiéne. *pag.* 25. *lin.* 22. If he haue me before him.

Mudár el pelo malo. *pag.*25. *lin.* 29. To change ill fortune.

Ves lo aquí. *pag.* 26. *lin.* 15. See it here.

De la aparéncia a la exiſténcia. *pag.*27. *lin.* 14. From that which ſeemes to be, to that which is indeed.

No cabe en coraçón de mi ámo. *pag.*28. *lin.* 6. It is not within the compaſſe of my maſters heart.

Que por la boca le ſale a borbollónes. *pag.*28. *lin.*6. But that it muſt bubble out of his mouth.

Ha, ha, ha, & Hi, hi, hi. *pag.* 28. *lin.* 14. Voices of laughing.

Aſſeſtár tiros. *pag.*28. *lin.* 17. To aime.

Eſcozióte. *pag.* 30. *lin.* 27. It touch't you, it made you ſmart.

Metér por los agujéros. *pag.* 32. *lin.*25. *verbatim.* To put into holes, *i.* to take in at windowes.

Deſque ſe deſcubren. *pag.* 33 *lin.* 12. From the time they diſcouer themſelues.

Cativo de mi, Meſquino de mi. *pag.* 34. *lin.* 20. Wretch that I am.

Aſſi me médre Dios, Aſſi te medre Dios. *pag.*34. *lin.* 23. *verbatim.* So God make me thriue, *i.* So God helpe me or proſper me.

Duelos tenémos. *pag.* 34. *lin.* 28. We haue mournings in hand.

Ojos verdes y raſgádos. *pag.* 35. *lin.* 14. Faire and great eies.

La tez liza y luſtroſa. *pag.*35. *lin.*24. The ſkin ſmooth and cleere.

Buen ándo haze eſto. *pag.*37. *lin.* 8. This makes good going forward.

Dias grándes ha, or Múchos dias ha. *pag.*37. *lin.* 15. A good while ſince.

Quede Dios con v. m. *pag.* 37. *lin.* 29. God be with you, or God remaine with you.

Dios vaya con v. m. *pag.*37. *lin.* 29. God conduct, or be your ſpæd.

Vaya v. m. con Dios. Goe in Gods name.

Que es del? *pag.* 38. *lin.* 15. What is become of him? where is he?

Hi, hi, hi. *pag.*39. *lin.* 2. A voice of laughing.

Tres dias ha. *pag.*39. *lin.* 4. It hath beene three daies.

Vo, for Voy. *pag.*39. *lin.* 12. I goe.

Por mi vida, Por tu vida. *pag.* 39. *lin.* 27. I pray thee heartily.

Quedate a Dios. *pag.* 40. *lin.* 11. God remaine with you, or keepe you.

Sey, for Se tu. *pag.* 40. *lin.* 21. Be thou.

No púde deſſeár bien, de que no te cupiéſſe parte. *pag.* 41. *lin.* 1. I could not ſo much as deſire, as wiſh any goodneſſe, in which thy part was not contained therein.

Si quiéra, for Solaménte. *pag.* 41. *lin.* 4.

Gelo prometí. *pag.* 41. *lin.* 28. I promiſed him it or that, for Se lo prometí.

Tha, tha, tha. *pag.* 42. *lin.* 3. The noiſe or beating of the knocking at a dore.

O que comedór de huévos aſſados. *pag.* 43. *lin.*21. Oh what a eater of roaſted Egges.

De que le ſervías? *pag.* 44. *lin.* 4. In what place or office didſt thou ſerue her in?

Curár de punto. *pag.* 47. *lin.* 18. To heale or cure with ſtitching vp, as with needle & thræd.

Téngote lo en grácia, or mercéd. *pag.*48. *lin.*24. I thanke thee for it.

Como quiera. *pag.* 49. *lin.* 29. Howſoeuer.

Dar en el fiel. *pag.* 51. *lin.* 4. To hit the pricke at ſhooting.

Para mi ſantiguáda. *pag.* 51. *lin.* 13. By my hallidome.

Do víno el aſno, verná el albarda. *pag.* 51. *lin.* 13. *verbatim.* Where the aſſe is come, the packe ſaddle will come, *i.* where the greater doth yeeld, the leſſe muſt of neceſſitie come after.

AFter I had read ouer *Diana de Monte mayor*, and other authors, gathering out the hardeſt ſpeeches, and explaining them for the learners vſe, and being come thus farre in *Celeſtine*, as you ſee, it came into my imagination, that running thorow him, and ſuch other hard Authors, by vnfolding ſo open to euery ones

view

view the difficulteſt points in the tongue, might breed ſome diſlike in men of mine own profeſſion (to whom I wiſh as to my ſelfe) as alſo little thankfulneſſe of others, who hauing their turnes ſerued, doe commonly verifie this prouerbe, (Eaten bread is forgotten.) I thought good not to deale all at once, but to keepe ſome to ſweeten their mouthes hereafter, as they ſhall be deſirous hereof, and the rather, for that notwithſtanding all this and more paines to, with coſt out of my purſe, neglecting my profeſſion and liuing, I haue already before I came neere the preſſe, taſted and had ſome experience of ſome of the greater ſort (if wealth and place haue that prerogatiue) which neuer ſaw any thing of my doing in their life, or heard mee ſpeake, by diſcourteous dealing enough to diſcourage mee from the publiſhing of any thing, to pleaſure or profit many; yet for the better minded, and more courteous diſpoſed, I here goe ſo farre with the Engliſhing hereof, and ſome Prouerbes following, whoſe curteſie if friendly I finde, may cauſe me to the farther vnfolding of this language to his farther content.

Words, Phraſes, Sentences and Prouerbs, out of *La vida de Lázaro de Tormes, in* 8. *Printed in Antwerp En la oficina Plantiniána, Anno M. D. XC V.*

Lo que uno no cóme, otro ſe pierde por ello. *pag.* 2. *lin.* 13. That which one eateth not, another is loſt for it, or longeth after it.

No ſér mas ſanto que mis vezinos. *pag.* 5. *lin.* 7. Not to be more holy then my neighbours.

Achacáron a mi padre ciertas ſangrías mal hechas en los coſtáles, *pag.* 7. *lin.* 18. They laid to my fathers charge certaine ripping the ſides of the ſacks.

Arrimár a los buenos. *pag.* 8. *lin.* 7. *pag.* 91. *lin.* 1. To leane or ſtay ones ſelfe vpon the good.

Echár la ſoga tras el caldéro. *pag.* 10. *lin.* 12. *verbatim.* To caſt the rope after the caldron, *i.* To caſt the helue after the hatchet.

Vale te por ti. *pag.* 11. *lin.* 16. *verbatim.* Be of auaile for thy ſelfe, *i.* Shift for thy ſelfe.

Par de una coſa. *pag.* 11. *lin.* 26. Juſt euen with any thing.

Mas da el duro que el deſnúdo. *pag.* 19. *lin.* 28. *verbatim.* More giueth the hard then the naked, *i.* More giueth the miſer or curmudgeon, then he that hath it not to giue.

Eſcapé del truéno y di en el Relampágo. *pag.* 28. *lin.* 23. I eſcaped the thunder and fell into the lightning.

No podér tener en las piernas. *pag.* 30. *lin.* 23. Not to be able to ſtand vpon the legs.

Dar el relóx la una, Dar las dos, las tres, &c. *pag.* 49. *lin.* 15. The clock to ſtrike one, two or three.

Ha dado la una, Han dado las dos, las tres, &c. *pag.* 50. *lin.* 25. It hath ſtrucke one a clocke, two a clocke, three a clocke.

En un crédo. *pag.* 57. *lin.* 14. In the twinkling of an eie.

Uña de vaca. *pag.* 62. *lin.* 1. A neats foot.

La bolſa ſin maldita la blanca. *pag.* 65. *lin.* 16. The deuill a penny in his purſe.

Oy dia. *pag.* 65. *lin.* 24. At this day.

Quebrémos el ojo al Diáblo. *pag.* 66. *lin.* 7. Let vs breake the necke of the Deuill.

Vóto or boto a Dios. *pag.* 70. *lin.* 4. I ſweare by God.

Del rey abaxo. *pag.* 71. *lin.* 6. From the King downeward.

Rompér çapatos. *pag.* 77. *lin.* 13. To weare out ſhoes.

Lançár del el demónio. *pag.* 85. *lin.* 8. To caſt out the Deuill from him.

Matár con un hombre. *pag.* 92. *lin.* 6. To fight with a man.

Quien bien te hará o ſe yrá o ſe morirá. *pag.* 94. *lin.* 7. He that ſhall or will do thee a good turne, either he will be gone, or he will die.

Words, Phraſes, Sentences and Prouerbs, out of *Menoſprécio de la Corte, or in French* Meſpris de la Court *in* 16. *Printed An. M.D.XCI.* per Iehan de Tournes.

Yr me a mi a la mano. *pag.* 70. *lin.* 19. *verbatim.* To goe me to my hand, *i.* To hinder, let or ſtop my ſelfe.

Ir por el atájo. *pag.* 93. *lin.* 14. To goe the ſhorteſt way.

Dar de mano a la corte. *pag.* 127. *lin.* 20. To ſhake hands or take leaue of the Court.

Dar

Dár la corte a Dios. *pag.* 137. *lin.* 10. To bid the Court farewell.
Andár en cuérpo. *pag.* 197. *lin.* 1. To goe in hoſe and doublet without a cloake.
No es de paſſár entre renglónes. *pag.* 200. *lin.* 20. It is not to be left obſcurely, or it is to be plainly written or ſet downe.
Verdura para la olla. *pag.* 202. *lin.* 19. Herbes for the pot, pot-herbs.
Bevér de buçes. *pag.* 209. *lin.* 5. To drinke as an oxe, or ſuch beaſts.
Jugár al herrón. *pag.* 227. *lin.* 13. To play at coits.
Corrér vn toro. *pag.* 228. *lin.* 3. To bait a Bull.
A pared y medio, pared en medio. com. Plauto. *fol.* 4. *b. lin.* 18. *pag.* 234. *lin.* 13. The next wall to one, but a wall betweene.
Clérigo ſin breviário. *pag.* 259. *lin.* 8. A Prieſt without a breuiarie.
Ruár calles. *pag.* 273. *lin.* 14. To gad about the ſtreets.
A pénas. *pag* 289. *lin.* 20. Hardly.
Embocár la bola al juego de argólla. *pag.* 360. *lin.* 2. To caſt the bowle into the hole of the ring at that play of Argolla, *i.* A ring.
Tirár coces *pag.* 380. *lin.* 10. To kicke.
Traér de tema la gorra. *pag.* 388. *lin.* 12. To ſet his hat to the good aleward, on one ſide the head.
Soſpécho que ſon pocos, y muy pocos, y aun muy poquitos y muy repoquitos. *pag.* 406. *lin.* 1. I ſuſpect there are few and very few, yea moſt few, yea feweſt of all.

Words, Phraſes, Sentences, and Prouerbs, out of *Floreſta Eſpañola, in* 16. *Printed in Salamanca*, 1592.

Eſtoy maravillado. *Epiſt. dedicatoria. pag.* 2. *lin.* 9. I wonder, I marualle.
El linage donde no avia corona, nunca medrava, *fol.* 6. *b. lin.* 4. *verbatim.* That kindred that had had a crowne in it neuer thriued, *i.* A Prieſt.
Mas paréce chychón, que Cardinál. *fol.* 7. *b. lin.* 1. It ſeemed rather a welke or puſtle then a ſtripe blacke and blew.
Rézias cámaras. *fol.* 11. *a. lin.* 18. Strong ſtolings.
Macho de filla. *fol.* 13. *a. lin.* 15. A nagge.
Vn hombre de grán memória ſin letras, tiene rueca y huſo y no eſtambre. *fol.* 21. *a. lin.* 1. A man of great memorie without learning, hath a rocke and a ſpindle, and no ſtuffe to ſpin.
Bolár vna grulla o ave. *fol.* 43. *b. lin.* 5. To flie at the Herron.
Guiſár la comida. *fol.* 43. *b. lin.* 6 To dreſſe meat.
Deſenſillár. *fol.* 53. *b. lin.* 19. To put out of a chaire. Alſo to vnſaddle.
Vnos moços de eſpuelas. *fol.* 60. *b. lin.* 1. Lackies or Foot-men.
A eſſe Page o capalde o encapalde, *fol.* 61. *b. lin.* 18. Either geld this Page or giue a cloake.
Tal cádreda vaca. *fol.* 74. *b. lin.* 2. Such a chaire was vacant.
Llámo me. *fol.* 76. *a. lin.* 15. I call my ſelfe, or I am called.
Puntos de çapátos, *fol.* 85. *b. lin.* 14. The ſtitches of ſhoes, or ſize of ſhoes, as nines, tens, &c.
Al freýr lo veréys. *fol.* 93. *a. lin. penultima, verbatim.* By frying you ſhall ſee, *i.* By proofe you ſhall finde.
Os demande la palabra. *fol.* 94. *b. lin.* 2. Let him challenge your word or promiſe.
Hazér quartos. *fol.* 90. *a. lin.* 3. To quarter.
Parár mientes. *fol.* 500. *a. lin.* 7. To marke.
Caldo. *fol.* 102. *b. lin.* 5. Broth, pottage.
Hazér la barba. *fol.* 112. *a. lin.* 16. To trim the beard.
De buena gana. *fol.* 226. *b. lin.* 5. With a good will.
Dezír grácias. *fol.* 234. *a. lin.* 18. To ſpeake merry conceits.

Marco Aurelio.

Sublimár, abatír. *pag.* 11. *lin.* 18. To lift vp and to abaſe.
A ley de bueno os juro. *pag.* 27. *lin.* 28. By the faith of a good man I ſweare.
Conviene a ſabér. *pag.* 42. *lin.* 16. That is to wit.
Sobrepujár. *pag.* 46. *lin.* 11. To ouerpoiſe.
Pendón de taverna. *pag.* 51. *lin.* 9. The ſigne of a Tauerne.
Jugár al axedrés. *pag.* 59. *lin.* 20. To play at Cheſſe.
Ponér obligación. *pag.* 234. *lin.* 26. To binde, to make one beholding to him.
Ponér el águila en los péchos. *pag.* 245. *lin.* 20. To put the Eagle on his breaſt, *i.* To ſweare the Emperours Armes the Eagle.

Armár çancadílla. *pag.* 256. *lin.* 2. To trip.
Cavallo de axedréz. *pag.* 279. *lin.* 26. The knight at Cheſſe.

De Comédia de Plauto Milite glorioſo in 16. printed at *Antwerp.* M. D. LV.

Fletár vna náo. *fol.* 8. *b. lin.* 19. To hire a ſhip and pay paſſage money.
Hazér a lo largo en la mar. *fol.* 8. *b. lin.* 23. To launch into the maine at ſea.
Dios te pague. *fol.* 12. *a. lin.* 11. God reward thee.
Ponér o̲ Hazer lumbre. *fol.* 17. *a. lin.* 23. To make a fire.
El puerco muerto ſabe mas quando ſe come. *fol.* 22. *a. lin.* 25. A dead hog taſteth beſt when he is eaten.
Hermáno del leche. *fol.* 25. *b. lin.* 17. A foſter brother.
Poco me doy por eſſo. *fol.* 28. *b. lin.* 19. Little care I for this.
Ordír tramas. *fol.* 29. *b. lin.* 8. *verbatim.* To ſpin webs, *i.* To worke deceits.

Comédia de *Plauto Menechmos*, in 16. bound with *Milite glorioſo.*

Para que ſe ténga en mas. *fol.* 54. *b. lin.* 16. That he or it may be more eſteemed.
Ambos a dos mancebos. *fol.* 55. *b. lin.* 15. Both the young men.
No perdáys palabra. *fol.* 56. *b. lin.* 10. *verbatim.* Doe not loſe a word, *i.* Be attentiue to that one ſhall ſay.
Hazér de nuéuas con alguno. *fol.* 67. *a. lin.* 19. To make himſelfe ſtrange with one, when he knoweth him well enough.

Araucana in 16. three in one volume, printed in *Antwerp.* 1597.

Cúchilla de la montáña. Elógio. *pag.* 3. *lin.* 8. The edge or ridge of a hill.
Rociáda dar. Elogio. *pag.* 3. *lin.* 12. To giue a volley of ſhot.
Como conſta por ſus óbras. Elogio. *pag.* 7. *lin.* 5. As appeareth by his workes.
Medír la pica al enimigo. *fol.* 3. *b. lin.* 33. To come to puſh of a pike with the enemy.
Pobládos penáchos. *fol.* 4. *a. lin.* 32. Thicke plumes of feathers.
Hazérſe a lo largo. *fol.* 13. *a. lin.* 10. *verbatim.* To make himſelfe alooſe, *i.* To ſtep out as men in a quarrell to draw their weapon.
A riénda ſuélta. *fol.* 31. *b. lin. penult. verbatim.* With a looſe raine of a bridle, *i.* at libertie, freely, as Reyr a riénda ſuélta. To laugh freely, at libertie.

I would goe forward in this courſe of ſeeking hard places and phraſes in Authors, but for that I haue now much other buſineſſe that nearer concernes me, onely certaine Prouerbes which I haue heretofore for mine owne vſe gathered, and here leaue ſome of them to your vſe, as ye ſhall beſt like them.

Refranes. Prouerbs.

Firſt ſetting downe the Engliſh word for word according to the Spaniſh with this word Verbatim. *Afterwardſ if it haue a ſenſe differing from the word, the meaning thus,* i. *for* id eſt: *that is to ſay.*

NO puede ſer mas negro el cuervo que ſus álas. *verbatim.* The Crow cannot be blacker then his wings, *i.* Nothing can exceed the higheſt degree.
Quien a ſu enemígo popa, a ſus manos muere. *verbatim.* Whoſoeuer diſdainfully dallies with his enemy, dies by his owne hand, *i.* by making no reckoning of his enemy, receiues damage.
Quien cóme y déxa, dos vezes póne la meſa. *verbatim.* Who dineth and leaueth for another time, couers the table twice, *i.* He that keepeth in ſtore, ſerueth his turne when he hath need.
Gran ſabór es comér y no eſcotár. *verbatim.* It is great ſauorineſſe to dine or eat, and not to pay any ſhot or reckoning, *i.* Good drinking of wine of another mans purſe.

La codícia rómpe el ſaco. *verbatim.* Couetouſneſſe burſteth the bagge, *i.* Neuer thinketh it full till it breake.

Mas vée en quatro ójos que no dos. *verbatim.* Foure eies ſee better then two, *i.* Two heads are better then one.

Mas vále páxaro en máno que bueytre bolíndo. *verbatim.* Better a Bird in hand then a Vulture flying, *i.* A Bird in hand worth ten in the buſh.

E'ntre hermános, no metas tus manos: Porque, quien los deſparte, lleua la peor parte. *verbat.* Betweene brothers put not thou thy hands; for who ſo ſeuers them hath the worſt of it.

Ni de eſtópa buen camiſa, ni de puta buena amiga. *verbatim.* Neither of hurds is made a good ſhirt, nor of a queane a good louer.

Quien ha officio ha beneficio. *verbatim.* He that hath an occupation or office, hath a benefit and a benefice.

En la boca cerrada no entra moſca. *verbatim.* In a cloſed vp mouth a flie cannot get in.

Mas cerca eſtán mis dientes que mis parientes. *verbatim.* My teeth are nearer to me then my kinred, *i.* Neere is my coat, but nearer is my ſhirt.

Mas vale ſer cabeça de Ratón, que cola de León. *verbatim.* Better to be the head of a Mouſe then the taile of a Lion, *i.* Better be cheeſe in a meane place, then vnderling in a greater.

Da Dios hávas, a quien no tiene quixádas. *verbatim.* God giueth beanes to them that haue no iawes to eat them, *i.* God ſends fooles fortune.

A cavallo comedór cabéſtro corto. *verbatim.* To a greedy eating horſe, a ſhort halter, *i.* To a prodigall man meane fortune: a curſt cow ſhort hornes.

Dime con quien ándas, y dezírte he quien éres. *verbatim.* Tell me with whom thou goeſt, and I will tell thee what thou art, *i.* Birds of a feather will flocke together; like will to like.

En la boca del diſcréto, Lo público es ſecreto. *verbatim.* In the wiſe mans mouth, that is manifeſt is kept ſecret.

Piedra movediza, no cria moho. *verbatim.* The rolling ſtone engenders no moſſe.

Mas vale ſabér, que avér. *verbatim.* It is better to haue knowledge then riches.

Quien mal en horna, ſaca los panes tuertos. *verbatim.* He that ſetteth in the bread in the ouen naughtily, drawеth out the loaues cruſhed awry: as one brewes, ſo let him drinke: as one plots ſo it proues.

Quien da preſto, da dos vézes. *verbatim.* He that gives quickly, giueth twice.

Miédo guarda viña y no viñadéro. *verbatim.* Feare keepeth and looketh to the vineyard, and not the owner, *i.* Feare makes one looke about.

A muértos y a ydos no ay amígos. *verbatim.* To dead men and abſent there are no friends left, *i.* Out of ſight out of minde.

La cóz de la yégua no haze mal al pótro. *verbatim.* The kicke of the mare hurteth not the colt, *i.* A friends reproofe neuer doth ill.

A vn traydór dos alevoſos. *verbatim.* To one traitor, two traitors, *i.* To ouer-reach one craftie knaue, ſet two craftie knaues to him and they will cony-catch him. The Italian ſaith, *A vn fino, vn fino & mezo.*

Jurado ha el vaño de negro, no hazér blanco. *verbatim.* The bath of the Blackmoore hath ſworne not to whiten, *i.* That which is bread in the bone, will neuer out of the fleſh.

En caſa del meſquino, manda mas la mugér que el marído. *verbatim.* In the houſe of the ſimple ſoule, the wife commands more then the husband, *i.*

In the houſe of the ſilly man of neceſſitie and of force,
The gray mare will ſtill proue the better horſe.

Es mas el ruýdo, que las nuezes. *verbatim.* The noiſe is greater then the nuts, *i.* More afraid then hurt.

Dos pardáles en vna eſpíga, házen mala liga. *verbatim.* Two ſparrowes on one eare of corne, make an ill agreement, *i.* Two Competitors cannot accord.

No es tan bravo el León como le pintan. *verbatim.* The Lion is not ſo fierce as they paint him, *i.* He is ſuch a one as he makes ſhew of.

En hora buena nace, quien buena fama cóbra. *verbatim.* He is borne in a good houre that gets himſelfe a good name, *i.* A good name is better then riches.

De baxo de mala capa, yaze buen bevedór. *verbatim.* Vnder a bad cloake lies a good drinker, *i.* The worſe outwardly attired, the better inwardly lined.

De rábo de puérco, nunca buen viróte. *verbatim.* Of a pigs taile you can neuer make a good ſhaft, *i.* Weary a foole in a morter, you cannot make him leaue his folly: a Clowne will neuer be made a King.

Que es eſſe hidalgo? El que háze las obras. *verbatim.* What is this Gentleman, *i.* Who is to bee a Gentleman? Euen he that doth the workes of a Gentleman.

El aſno ſúfre la cárga, no la ſobre carga. *verbatim.* The Aſſe endureth his burden, but not more then his burden.

Amenezados pán cómen. *verbatim.* Threatned men eat bread, *i.* The threatned men liue long.

Piénſa el ladrón, que todos ſon de ſu condición. *verbatim.* The theefe thinketh that all are of his condition, *i.* Euery one iudgeth another by himſelfe.

Mas vale vn tóma que dos te daré. *verbatim.* One hold is better then two I will giue thee. Once giuing is better then often promiſing.

No ſe gána çamóra en vn hóra. *verbatim.* çamóra (a ſtrong towne) is not wonne in an houre, *i.* Rome was not built in a day.

Quién tiémpo tiene, y tiémpo atiende, tiémpo viéne, que ſe arrepiénte. *verbatim.* He that hath time, and lookes for better time, Time comes that he repent himſelfe of time.

Buén coraçón quebránta mála ventura. *verbatim.* A good heart breaketh ill hap, *i.* A good heart ouercommeth all.

Mundo redondo quién no ſabe nadár va ſe en hóndo. *verbatim.* Round world, he that cannot ſwim, let him sinke to the bottome.

Malas ſon las búrlas verdadéras. *verbatim.* True ieſts are ill, *i.* It is ill to ieſt at that which was done in deed.

Quién te háze fiéſta, que no lo ſuéle hazér, o te quiére engañár, o te ha meneſtér. *verbatim.* Who ſo maketh much of thee that was not wont, either will deceiue or ſtands in need of thee.

Quién a ſólas come el gállo, a ſólas enſilla ſu cavállo. *verbatim.* Whoſoeuer eats the Cocke alone, ſaddles the horſe alone, *i.* He that will keepe his meat and his money to himſelfe, muſt do his buſineſſe himſelfe.

Ház bién y no cates a quién, haz mal y guárte. *verbatim.* Doe good and regard not to whom, doe euill and take heed of thy ſelfe.

Quién a buén árbol ſe arrima buéna ſombra le cobíja. *verbatim.* Whoſoeuer leaneth to a good tree, getteth a good ſhadow, *i.* Whoſoeuer hath a ſure man to truſt vnto, hath a great pleaſure.

Quien no paréce peréce. *verbatim.* Who appeareth not, periſheth, *i.* Out of ſight, out of minde.

Biva comígo y búſca quien te manténga. *verbatim.* Liue with me, and ſeeke ſome other that may maintaine thee, *i.* Doe me ſeruice, and get maintenance where thou canſt.

Hónra y provecho, no cáben en vn ſáco. *verbatim.* Honour and profit are not contained together in one ſacke, *i.* If you be honorable, you muſt be liberall and not reſpect your money.

Quien quíta l'occaſión, quíta el pecádo. *verbatim.* He that taketh away the occaſion, taketh away the offence, *i.* He that remoueth the allurements, taketh away the ſinne.

La pobréza no es viléza mas inconveniéncia. *verbatim.* Pouertie is no vile or vicious matter, but yet an inconuenience.

Las quéntas en la máno, y el diáblo en el capíllo. *verbatim.* The beads in the hand, and the deuill in his capuch or cape of his cloake, *i.* God in his mouth, and the deuill in his heart: good words and wicked deeds.

Palábras y plúmas el viénto las lléva. *verbatim.* Words and feathers the wind carrieth away, *i.* Words are but wind.

Ni Sávado ſin ſól, ni moça ſin amór, ni véjo ſin dolór. *verbatim.* Neither Sabbath without ſunne, nor young wench without loue, nor an old body without griefe or ache.

Fuégo de eſtópa,	Fire of flax,
Amór de púta,	Loue of a queane,
Viénto del cúlo,	Wind from the taile,
Tódo es vno.	All is one.

Guárdate
- De ýra de Señór y de alboróto de puéblo.
- De lócos en lugár eſtrécho.
- De hónra menguáda, y génte que no tiéne náda.
- De móça adeuína, y mugér latína.
- De perſóna ſeñaláda, y de Biúda tres vézes caſáda.
- De lódos al caminár, y de luénga enfermedád.
- De viénto que entre per horádo, y de enimígo que ſéa reconciliádo.
- De madraſta, el nombre le báſta.

Take heed
- Of the wrath of a mighty man and the tumult of the people.
- Of mad fooles in a narrow place.
- Of credit decaied, and people which haue nothing.
- Of a young wench a Prophetesſe, and a Latine woman.
- Of a perſon marked, and a widow thrice married.
- Of foule durtie waies and long ſickneſſe.
- Of wind that comes in at a hole, and of a reconciled enemy.
- Of a ſtepmother, the very name of her ſufficeth.

FINIS.

PLEASANT
AND
Delightfull Dialogues
IN SPANISH
AND ENGLISH:
Profitable to the Learner, and
not vnpleaſant to any other Reader.

By *Iohn Minſheu* Profeſſor of Languages in
LONDON.

Vireſcit vulnere Virtus.

¶ Printed at London by IOHN HAVILAND for
William Aſpley. 1623.

XUM

Al mui illuſtre Señor, Don Eduardo Hobby: ſu aficionado ſervidor *Juan Minſheu* deſsé a ſalúd, y perpetua felicidád.

My illuſtre Señor, de aquel famoſo pintor Apeles *ſe quenta, que aviendo acabado de pintár una hermoſa tabla, temendola ſolgada en parte públicа; inumerable gente de todas ſuertes combidá la de la lindeza della, ſuſpendiéron ſu curſo, y ſe detuviéron a contemplár-la, entre los de mas, ſe acertó a llegár un rúſtico labradór, y como todos alabáſſen grandemente el ingénio del artífice, iantamente con la pintura: el villáno, con boz ronca y mal compueſta, díxo, una gran falta tiene éſta tabla; lo qual como oyeſſe* Apeles, *le preguntó qual fueſſe éſta? El reſponnió, aquella eſpíga ſobre la qual eſtá aquel páxaro ſentádo, deviera eſtár mas inclinada, porque conforme al peſo que preſuppone el páxaro y la flaqueza de la caña, no podía ſuſtentár le ſin doblár ſe mas, oydo éſto por el pintór, vió que tenía razón el villáno; y tomando el pincél, emendó luego aquella falta, ſiguiendo ſu parecér; ſobérbio pues el rúſtico con ver que ſe uviéſſe tomado ſu voto, paſſó mas adelante, y díxo, aquellos çapatos que aquella figura tiene no eſtán buennos, a éſto le reſpondió* Apeles, *Hermano cura de tu arte, y dexa a cada uno el ſuyo. Eſtá figura, muy iluſtre ſeñor, he querído traér, por dezír, que ſi todos los hombres ſe conformáſſen con lo que ſáuen y que ſu ingénio alcança, no quiſiéſſen paſſár adelante, a ſaber lo que no es de ſu profeſſión ny les toca, ny ellos quedarían corridos, como éſte villáno, ni el labradór ſe entremeterría a tratár de la guerra, ny el mercadér de la cavallaría, ny el oficiál de las ſciéncias, ny el herréro ſe pondría a diſputár puntos de teología; Sino que tratando cada uno aquello a que ſu capacidád ſe eſtiende, y no mas, ſería un concierto maravillóſo, que reſultaría en grande utilidád de toda la república, y para éſto deviámos tomar exemplo en las coſas naturales, las quales perpetuamente guárdan ſu órden y concierto, ſin entremetérſe las unas a hazér el oficio de las otras, y anſi vémos que ny la tierra caliénta, ny el fuego produze, ny el viento riéga, ny el agua ventéa, ſino que cada coſa tiene ſu calidád, y oficio particulár. Pues aviéndoſe de guardár éſte concierto y órden, a v. m. conviene y toca el juſgár de éſta mi obra, como aquel que entre todos los demas, tiene el primado de la lengua Eſpañola, ſegun la facilidad con que ſe le a dádo, y la perfecion con que la habla, pero tambien en otras muchas ſciencias, y facultádes, en que v. m. reſplandéce ſobre todos los de nueſtro tiempo. Aqui no es de eluidár la reſulgente, rara y acabada perfecion en hermoſura, doctrina, lenguas, de la muy iluſtre Señora Doña* Margarita *ſu muger de v. m. Dios ſabe, ſi yo quiſiera dedicár le toda*

la

la obra entera y no partida en parte, (pues quando no uviéra las razones díchas para haźérlo; baſtava el agradecimiento y beneuolẽcia, que v. m. moſtró al que primero imprendió lo que he yo ampliado, y hecho mas copioſo: Peró el lo dexádo de hazer, por los razones a my júyzio; la vna es la obligación preciſa que tengo a las perſonas a quien va dirigida, no ſolo de obediencia y amiſtád, ſino tambien de ayuda, favór, y ſocorro, que me han dado, para podér llegarla a ſu fin; y la otra razón es, a verſe començado, proſeguido, y acabado en ſu nombre, y para que ſe apovéchan della, en ſu miniſterio. Peró ya que lo que es mayór en cantidád tengo empleado, lo que es ygual en calidád, o freſco y dedico a. v. m. y éſto mas por lo que a mi importa, pues quedaré ſeguro que los detractores no oſen mordér en lo que ha ſido cenſurádo per tan primo júyzio y entendimiento, que no por la glória o vtilidád que dello ſe podra ſeguir a v. m. ultra de que con eſto ſatisfaga en parte la deuda de agradecimiento, que dévo a quien con tanta voluntád favorece a mi profeſſion, oficio verdaderamente próprio de hombres ſábios y diſcrétos, anſi como es de ygnorantes y poco menos que béſtias, el impedír ſemejantes exercicios lo qual no cabe ſino en hombres grueſſos de entendimiento, y de conciẽcias, Suplico a. v. m. ſe ſerva de recebír eſſo pequeño ſeruicio, aunque con grande voluntád ofrecido, y ponér lo debaxo de ſu protectión y ampáro, pues con eſto, la obra quederá ſegura, y yo tambien lo eſtaré, de que eſtá bien empleada: y tomaré álas para emprendér mayóres cóſas en nombre de v. m. Cuya muy ilnſtre perſona, nueſtro ſeñor guarde con acrecentamiento de mayóres eſtados.

Béſa las manos de v. m. ſu ſervidór,

IOHN MINSHEU.

Diálogo primêro para levantárse por la mañána y las cosas a ello pertenecién-tes, entre un hidálgo llamádo don Pedro y su criádo Alonso, y un su amígo llamádo don Iuan, y una ána.

D.P. OYes moço?
A. Señór.
d.P. Que óra es?
A. Las cinco son dádas.
d.P. Levántate y abre aquella ventána a vér si es de dia.
A. Aun no es bien amenecído.
d.P. Pues asno, como dixíste que ha dado las çinco?
A. Señór las çinco yo las conté, peró el relóx y la mañána no ándan a úna.
d.P. O tu miéntes o el relóx miénte, que el sol no puede mentír.
A. Mas vale que miénto yo, que no el año.
d.P. Que día haze?
A. Señór nubládo.
d.P. En los ójos déves tu de tenér las núbes que el cielo yo le véo cláro.
A. Pues no estóy çiégo.
d.P. Antes créo que estas durmiéndo toda vía.
A. Sé, que no soy elefante que tengo de dormírme en pie.
d.P. Haze frío?
A. Vn cerceganíllo éntra por la ventána que córta las narízes.

d.P. Dáme de vestír que me quiéro levantár.
A. A que, tan de mañana?
d.P. A negociár, que téngo mucho que hazér oy.
A. Aun no estará nádie en pie.
d.P. Tu adevínas a tu provécho.

A. Que vestído se quiere ponér vuestra mercéd?
d.P. El de velárte, que dízen que es hónra y provécho.
A. Que jubón?
d.P. El de ráso pespuntádo.
A. He le aquí.
d.P. ✻ Majadéro, pues el jubon me trá-ces,

The first Dialogue of rising in the morning, and of those things thereunto appertaining: betweene a Gentleman named *M. Peter*, and his seruant *Alonso*, and another friend of his called *M. Iohn*, and a Nurse of the house.

P. YOuth, doest thou heare?
A. Sir.
P. What is it of the clocke?
A. It hath strucken fiue.
P. Rise, and open that window, to see if it be day.
A. It is not yet breake of the day.
P. Why then assehead, why saidst thou that it had strucke fiue a clocke?
A. Sir, I told you fiue, but the clocke and the morning goe not together.

P. Either thou liest, or the clocke lieth, for the Sunne cannot lie.
A. It is better that I lie, then the yeare proue out ill.
P. What weather is it?
A. Sir cloudie weather.
P Belike thine eies be cloudie, for I see the skie cleere.

A. Yet am I not blinde.
P. Rather I beleeue thou standest sleepeing.
A. I know I am not an Elephant to sleepe standing.
P. Is it cold weather?
A. Here comes in such a cold Northerly wind at the window, that it bites off my nose.
P. Giue me my clothes, for I will rise.

A. What to doe so early?
P. To goe about businesse, for I haue much to doe to day.
A. No body will be yet stirring.
P. Thou doest propheste for thine owne behoofe.
A. What apparell will you weare to day Sir?
P. That of the fine blacke cloth, for it is of estimation and profitable.
A. What doublet?
P. That of stitched Satten.
A. Here it is.
P. Blocke head, doest thou bring me my doublet

es, ántes que la camíſa, quiéres me motéjár de açotádo.

*doublet before my ſhirt, wilt thou ſcoffe me as though I had beene *whipped?*

* *Thoſe that be whipped, put on their doublets in haſte before their ſhirts, to ſaue them from another laſh.*

A. Aun no ha tráydo las camíças la labandéra.

A. The Laundreſſe hath not yet brought home the ſhirts.

d.P. Pues, hide púta y'd por éllas.

P. Whoorſonne knaue, goe then for them.

A. ✲ Al Ruyn de Róma, quando le nómbran, luégo aſóma, aquí viéne ya la labandéra.

A. Lupus eſt in fabula, as ſoone as one names him, preſently he appeares, here comes the Laundreſſe.

d.P. Eſtá enxúta?

P. Is it dry?

A. Como vn cuérno.

A. As dry as a horne.

d.P. No os he dícho, que no me traygáys éſſa compariciónes?

P. Haue I not told thee, that thou bring me no ſuch compariſons?

A. ✲ Ello fuéra, Si fuéra, v.m. perſóna Soſpechóſa que no ſe a de mentár la ſóga, en caſa del ahorcádo.

A. That is true, if ye were a perſon ſuſpected, for a man ought not to make mention of a halter in the houſe of a man that was hanged.

d.P. Dáme las cálças de terciopélo acuchilládas.

P. Giue me my paned veluet hoſe.

A. Aqui eſtán ſeñór.

A. Here they are Sir.

d.P. Eſtán limpias? mira bien ſi tiénen algun púnto ſuelto las médias.

P. Be they made cleane? Looke well if the ſtockings haue any ſtitches broken in them.

A. Eſſa es vna de las tres coſas que Ganáſa dezía, que el hombre búſca con gran cuydádo, y quando las ha halládo le péſa.

A. This is one of the three things which Ganaſa ſaid, a man ſeekes diligently after, and when hee hath found them it grieues him.

d.P. Y quales ſon las de mas?

P. And what are the other two?

A. Vna ſuziedád en la cáma, y los cuérnos, ſi ſu mugér ſe los póne, peró éſtas ſánas eſtán.

A. Filth in the bed one lieth in, and hornes if they be of his owne wiues grafting, but theſe ſtockings are whole.

d.P. Cálçamelas, dáme el ſáyo de velárte, quel de ráxa es muy delgádo para éſte fríoque háze.

P. Pull them on, giue me that Ierkin of blacke cloth, for that of thin cloth raſh, is very thin for this cold weather.

A. Quiére, v. m. ponérſe borzeguíes?

A. Will you weare buskins?

d.P. No ſino çapátos y pantúflos, por amór del lódo: Dáme priméro aguamános.

P. No, but pumps and pantofles, becauſe of the durt: Giue me firſt water to waſh my hands.

A. Señór el água eſtá eláda en el járro.

A. Sir, the water is frozen in the pot.

d.P. Buéna ſeñál. A. De que ſeñór? d.P. de Caránbanos.

P. A good ſigne. A. Of what Sir? P. Of Ice.

A. Y aun de que háze frío.

A. And alſo that it is cold.

d.P. Derritelo en el braſéro, dáme entre tánto el eſpéjo y vnas tixéras que quiéro adereçárme la bárva.

P. Thaw it in the pan of coales, in the meane while giue me the looking glaſſe and ſciſſers, for I will trim my beard.

A. Aquí eſtá el eſtúche donde eſtá tódo, y tambien el péyne.

A. Here is the caſe where all are in it, and likewiſe the combe.

d.P. O que de cánas téngo, ya me voy parándo

P. O what hoare haires I haue, I begin to wax

parándo véjo.

A. Señór, las navidádes no ſe van en bálde.

d. P. Por ciérto no téngo muchas, ſino * como dízen en mi tiérra, cánas y cuérnos no vienen por días.

A. Ya eſtá buéna éſta água, bien ſe puede vueſtra merced lavár.

d. P. Pues dacá la fuénte, y la toalla.

A. Quiére. v. m. Llevér capa y górra o herreruélo y ſombréro?

d. P. No es aóra tiémpo de górra, dame el ferreruélo lárgo, y vn ſombréro de fiéltro.

A. Que eſpáda? Dorada, plateáda o Pavonáda?

d. P. No la quiéro, ſino enbarnizáda por ſi lloviére, Mira quien llama a ſa puérta.

A. El Señór don Iuan es.

d. P. Córre abre préſto.

d. I. Muy buenos dias dé Dios. a v. m. Señór don Pédro.

d. P. O ſeñór don Iuan. v. m. ſéa tan bien * venido como los buenos años: como eſtá v. m?

d. I. Muy al ſervício de v. m. v. m. eſtá bueno?

d. P. Al ſervício de v. m. como eſtuviére, aunque algo achacóſo.

d. I. Pues porque madrúga tanto ſino ánda bueno?

d. P. Porque dízen los médicos que para la ſalúd, es bueno levantár de mañána.

d. I. Eſſa ſalúd ténganſe la éllos, que para mi éſtos ſon los dias que devémos metér en caſa cómo díze el Refrán, o que los tengámos en la cama, dixéra mejór.

d. P. Para dezír la verdád, yo mas lo hágo, por entendér en mis negócios.

d. I. Como le va a v. m. dellos?

d. P. Señór al ſervício de v. m. mal bendíto ſea Dios.

d. I. Como anſi no deſpáchan a v. m?

d. P. Si Señór deſpéchan me. Mucácho tráe nos de almorzár antes que ſalgámos.

d. I. Ya

wax old.

A. Sir, yeares paſſe not ouer ones head in vaine.

P. Truly, I haue not many yeares on my backe, but as they ſay in my Country, Hoare haires, and hornes come not by age.

A. This water is now well, you may now well waſh Sir.

P. Then giue here the baſon and yewer, and the towell.

A. Will you weare a ſhort cloake and cap, or long cloake and hat?

P. It is no weather now for a cap, giue me a long cloake with felt hat.

A. What rapier, gilt, ſilvered, or ſanguined?

P. None, but that varniſht rapier, leſt it ſhould raine: Go looke who knockes at the doore.

A. It is maſter Iohn.

P. Run, open the doore quickly.

I. God giue you good morrow maſter Peter.

P. Oh maſter Iohn, you are as well welcome as good fortune: how doe you Sir?

I. Readie to doe you ſeruice, and are you well Sir?

P. Howſoeuer Sir, at your command, although now I am not halfe well.

I. Why then doe you riſe ſo early, if you be not well?

P. Becauſe Phyſitians ſay, that for ones health it is good to riſe early in the morning.

I. That health let them haue themſelues for me, theſe be the good dayes (as the Prouerbe ſaith) which wee ought to lock vp within our doores, nay (I ſhould ſay) within our beds.

P. To tell you the truth, I doe it chiefly to follow my buſineſſe.

I. How goeth it with you in your buſineſſe?

P. Sir at your command, but ill enough God be thanked.

I. How, doe they not diſpatch you?

P. Yea Sir, they diſpatch me. Boy, giue vs ſomewhat to breakefaſt before wee goe forth.

d.I. Ya yo he bevido vna véz.
I. I haue already eaten a bit.

d.P. Beverá. v. m. ótra que nóle hará mal.
P. One bit more will doe you no harme.

d.I. ✻No, que no ſoy tan delicádo como judío en viérnes.
I. No, for I am not ſo curious as the Iew on a Friday.

A. Que quieren vs. ms. almorzár.
A. What will your Worſhips breake your faſt withall?

d.P. Tráe vnos paſtéles y vn quartillo de cabrito alládo.
P. Bring a pie, and a quarter of a roſted Kid.

d.I. Que bien adereçádo tiene. v. m. éſte apoſénto ſeñór don P?
I. Oh how well in order haue you this lodging M. Peter?

d.P. Señór Razonáble como para vn hidálgo póbre.
P. Sir reaſonable for a poore Gentleman.

d.I. De donde úvo. v. m. éſta tapicería?
I. From whence had you this Tapeſtrie hangings?

d.P. Señór; de Flandes víno.
P. Sir it came from Flanders.

d.I. Tambien déven deſer de alla los liénços o pintúras o Retrátos?
I. And from thence alſo came theſe pictures and portraitures?

d.P. Algúnos déllos, otros ſon de Ytália.
P. Some of them did, others came from Italy.

d.I. De gentíl máno ſon por cierto: quanto le coſtó. a v. m. éſte eſcritório?
I. Truly they are of a fine workmans doing. What coſt this deske or caske?

d.P. Más que vale, quarenta ducádos.
P. More than it is worth, fortie duckets.

d.I. De que madéra es?
I. Of what wood is it?

d.P. La colorada es caóba de la Havána y ésta négra es évano, la blánca es marfil.
P. The red is Caóba *of Hauana, and this blacke is Ebonie, and the white is Iuorie.*

* *Caóba, a fine red wood in the Indies, of which they make checker worke, and other curious workes in cupboards, &c.*

d.I. Cierto que eſtá muy curióſo, y muy bien aſcentáda la taraçéa.
I. Truly it is very curious, and the inlaying of the wood moſt finely ſet in.

d.P. Aquí verá. v. m. vn buféte mejór labrádo.
P. Here may you ſee a ſtanding table, better wrought.

d.I. Adonde fue hécho?
I. Where was it made?

d.P. El y las ſíllas viniéron de Salamánca.
P. That and the chaires came from Salamanca.

d.I. Lo mejór le falta a v. m. en éſte apoſento.
I. The beſt thing is yet wanting in this lodging.

d.P. Que es, por vída del Señór don Juan?
P. What is it I pray you heartily Maſter Iohn?

d.I. Por lo que dezía don juan manuel, un ſonezíto de chapín.
I. That which Don Iohn Manuel ſaid, the gentle ſound of a womans ſhoe.

d.P. Ya entiendo, por la mugér lo díze v. m.
P. Now I vnderſtand you meane a wife.

d.I. Por la miſma.
I. Euen the ſelfe-ſame.

d.P. Ami me paréçe que lo mejór que tiene es eſtár ſin ella.
P. It ſeemes vnto me, that the beſt thing my lodging hath, is to bee without her.

d.I. ✻O Señór no diga. v. m. eſſo que es triſte coſa la ſoledád.
I. Oh Sir, ſay not ſo, ſolitarineſſe is vnpleaſant.

d.P. ✻A tengo me al que díze, que Vale mas ſolo que mal acompañádo.
P. Ah Sir, I ſtand to that old ſaying, Better alone than euill accompanied.

d.I. Pues
I. But

d. I. Pues no ſe entiende que a de ſer mala.

I. But you muſt not underſtand of a bad wife.

d. P. Y adónde le hallarémos que ſea buena?

P. And where ſhall we finde hir that is good?

d I. Muchas ay muy buenas.

I. There are many very good.

d. P. Es verdad, las que eſtán enterrádas.

P. It is true, they which are dead and buried.

d. I. De ſuerte que quiere. v. m. dezír que la mujér eſtonçes es buena quando eſtá muerta.

I. So that you will ſay, that a woman is then good, when ſhe is dead.

d. P. Digo Señór que cada loco con ſu tema, yo he dado a ora en éſta.

P. I ſay Sir, that euery foole hath his wilfulneſſe, and I haue lighted now vpon this.

d. I. ✲ Y ſe ſaldrá. v. m. con ella, como el Rey con ſus álcaválas.

I. And you ſhall as eaſily carrie it away as the King doth his ſubſidies.*

* Without controulment.

d. P. ✲ Se díze que úna buena múla, y vna buena cabra, y vna buena mugér ſon tres, malas cúcas.

P. It is ſaid, that a good mule, a good goat, and a good woman are three vnhappy creatures.

Al. La meſa eſtá pueſta bien ſe pueden ſentar. vs. ms. a almorzar.

A. The table is couered, your worſhips may well ſit downe to breakefaſt.

d. P. Señór don Iuan tome. vs. ms. aquella cabeçera.

P. M. Iohn, ſit you downe at the vpper end of the table.

d. I. Bueno ſería, eſſo es per motejarme de viejo.

I. It ſhould doe well indeed, that is a flout becauſe I am old.

d. P. No, ſi no por cumplír con la razón.

P. Not ſo, but to doe you right.

d. I. V. m. tome ſu lugár que yo tomaré el mio.

I. Take you your place, and I will take mine.

d. P. Bueno es que venga a mi caſa, quien mande en ella mas que yo.

P. It is verie good, that I ſhould haue ſuch a gueſt as ſhould command more in my houſe than my ſelfe.

d. I. O ſi por ay lo echa. v m. yo obedeſco en ſu caſa y fuera.

I. Oh Sir if you take it ſo, I not onely obey you in your houſe, but abroad alſo.

d. P. Yo ſoy el que tengo de ſervír como la razón me obliga. Muchacho dacá platos.

P. Sir I am to be at your ſeruice, as reaſon bindeth me. Boy giue mee diſhes here.

Al. Aqui eſtan Señór.

A. Heere they are Sir.

d. P. De adonde truxíſte eſtos paſtéles?

P. From whence didſt thou fetch theſe pies?

Al. De la mas límpia paſtelera que ay en la ciudad.

A. From the cleanlieſt Pie-wife that is in the Citie.

d. P. Son de nueſtra vezína la hermoſa?

P. What from our faire neighbour?

Al. Si Señór.

A. Yea Sir.

d. P. Bien los puede. v. m. comér ſin aſco que de mujer límpia ſon.

P. Well may you eat Sir of them without loathing, for they are from a cleanly woman.

d. I. Mas que nunca lo fueran, nunca yo miro en miſérias.

I. And if they were not, I neuer ſticke for ſmall matters.

d. P. Pues menos mirára, ſi fuera tan amigo de ellos como yo.

P. Leſſe would you ſtand vpon it, if you did loue them as I doe.

d. I. Muy bien me ſáben, y lo mejór que yo les hallo es ſer comida tan

I. They pleaſe my taſte well, and the beſt is that I alwaies finde them to be a

tan acorrída, que a qual quier, ora, que el hombre la quiera la halla guiſada.

meat ſo in readineſſe, that at whatſoeuer houre a man will haue it he may finde it ready dreſt.

d.P. Muchácho da nos de bevér que pica la pimiénta.

P. Boy giue vs drinke, for the Pepper bites.

Al. Que quiere, v. m. blanco o tinto?

*A. Which will you haue Sir, Sack or *Tinto?*

* *Tinto is a wine in Spaine red and black ſh.*

d.P. Echa de lo blanco, que es mas caliente para por la mañána.

P. Fill out of the Sacke, for it is more heating, chiefly for the morning.

d.I. Y aun es mas ſaludáble que lo tinto.

I. And alſo is more wholeſome than the red.

d.P. Brindo a v. m. Señór don Iuán.

P. I drinke to you maſter Iohn.

d.I. Beſo, a v. m. las manos, haré la razon.

I. I thanke you Sir, I will pledge you.

Al. Por qual táça quiere, v. m. bevér, por la Llana o por eſta hondilla.

A. In which cup will your worſhip drinke, in the plaine bowle, or in the little deepe one.

d.I. Alonſo amigo, avéis de ſabér que yo ſoy muy buen borrácho y ſé muy bien lo que me bévo, por eſſo echalme por aquella taça llana.

I. Friend Alonſo you muſt know, that I am a very good drinker, and know how much I vſe to drinke, wherefore fill me that plaine bowle.

d.P. Yo guſto mas de bevér por eſta copa de vídrio que no por ninguna de las taças.

P. I like better to drinke out of this drinking Glaſſe, than out of any other of the cups.

d.I. ✲Señór, contra guſtos no ay diſpúta.

I. Sir, againſt ones liking there is no diſputing.

d.P. Anſi es verdád, con eſta pierna de cabríto beverá, v. m. otra véz, y trae vnas aceitúnas para la terçera.

P. It is ſo Sir: this legge of Kid will make you once againe haue a quarrell to the cup. Bring vs ſome Olives for the third courſe.

d.I. Eſſa ya ſe llamará comída y no almuérzo.

I. This is to be called a dinner, and not a breakefaſt.

d.P. Porque?

P. Why?

d.I. Porque dízen a buen comér o mal comér, tres vézes ſe a de bevér.

I. Becauſe to a good meale or a bad, three draughts onely are to be had.

d.P. Ay dize nueſtra madre çeleſtína ✲ que eſtá corrúpta la letra que por dezír tréze díxo tres.

P. Alas ſaith our mother Celeſtine, the letter is corrupted, for whereas he ſhould haue ſaid thirteene, he ſet downe three.

d.I. Aora Señór bien eſtá lo hecho, no mas que perderémos la gana de el comér.

I. Well Sir, it ſufficeth, we haue eaten well, no more, for we ſhall looſe our ſtomacks to eat at dinner.

d.P. Den nos a bevér otras ſendas de la calabriáda.

*P. Let them giue to each of vs once againe of the * Calabriáda.*

* Calabriáda: *a mixed wine, halfe one wine and halfe another*

d.I. Adonde yrémos?

I. Whither ſhall we goe?

d.P. Lo priméro a la yglésia, y encomendár nos a Dios.

P. Firſt to the Church, to commend our ſelues to God.

d.I. ✲Eſtá muy bien, que por yr a la yglésia ni dar çevada, no ſe pierde jornada.

I. It is very good, for neither in going to the Church, nor in giuing prouender to thy horſe, was there euer iourney hindred or loſt.

d.P. çierra

P. Shut

d. P. çierra aquel cofre, pon en cobro eſſas baratíjas, llama al áma que barra y componga eſte apoſento.

P. Shut that cheſt, put vp ſafe this houſehold ſtuffe, call the nurſe that ſhee ſweepe and dreſſe this lodging.

Al. Tengo de yr acompañando a v. m ?

A. Shall I waite on you Sir ?

d. P. No, ſino quédate en caſa, ayúda al áma y limpia todos mis veſtídos y ponedla en órden y a las onze llevame el cavallo a palácio.

P. No, but tarie in the houſe, helpe the nurſe, and bruſh all my apparell, and ſet the houſe in order, and at eleuen of the clocke bring my horſe to the Court.

Al. Eſtá muy bien Señór, yo lo haré anſi.

A. Very well Sir, I will doe it.

d. P. ✻ éſte mi criádo Señór don juan, es como malílla que hago de ello que quiero.

*P. This my ſeruant maſter Iohn is as the *Malilla, for I make of him what I will.*

* *Malilla a card agreed vpon, that he that hath him may make of him, king, queene, knaue, ace, nine, ten, or whatſoeuer other card.*

d. I. Y aun anda. v. m. en lo çierto para ſér bien ſervido, que quando hombre tiene muchos criádos, unos por otros nunca házen cóſa a deréchas.

I. And thereby you are ſure to bee well ſerued, for when a man hath many ſeruants, one by reaſon of the other neuer doe that they ought.

d. P. El me ſirve de mayordómo, de repoſtéro, de maeſtre ſala, de guarda ropa, de paje, y de lacáyo, y a vézes de deſpenſéro.

P. He ſerueth me for ſteward of my houſe, for a keeper of my plate, for a gentleman-vſher, wardrobe-keeper, page, and for lacquey, and ſometimes for cater.

d. I. El paréce buen hijo.

I. He ſeemes to be an honeſt fellow, a good fellow or good ſeruant.

d. P. Bueno Señor es tan bueno que a ſer mas, no valiéra nada, ſola vna falta tiene.

P. Good Sir, ſo good he is, that if he were better, he were worth nothing, onely one fault he hath.

d. I. Qual es ?

I. What is that ?

d. P. ✻ Que es grandíſſimo enemígo de el água.

P. That he loues no water by no meanes.

d. I. Eſſo hará lo, por el bien que le ſábe el vino, peró eſſa no ſe puede llamár falta, ſi no ſóbra.

I. That is for the good he findes in Wine, but this cannot be called a want in him, but a ſuperfluitie.

d. P. Muchácho cierra la puérta, con la ✻ llave, que a puérta çerráda el Diablo ſe buelue.

P. Boy, locke the doore with the key, for at a locked doore, the diuell himſelfe goeth his way.

Al. Ama, tráyga vn caldéro de água y vna eſcóba, regarémos y barrarémos éſte apoſénto.

A. Nurſe, bring a kettle of water and a broome, we will caſt water on, and ſweepe this chamber.

Ama. Toma priméro eſta rópa blanca que tráxo la labandéra.

N. Take firſt this cleane linnen which the Laundreſſe brought home.

Al. Aguarde, ſacaré la memória para vér ſi falta algo.

A. Stay a little, I will take out the note to ſee if any thing be wanting.

Am. Adonde la tienes ?

N. Where is it ?

Al. Aquí eſta enmi faltriquéra.

A. Heere it is in my pocket.

Am. Lee la pues.

N. Reade it then.

Al. Memória de la ropa de mi ámo que llevó la lavandéra en diez de março de 1599. primeraménte, quatro camiſas, con ſus cuellos

A. A note of my Maſters clothes which the Laundreſſe had the tenth of March, 1599. Firſt, foure ſhirts, with their ruffe bands

cuellos de lechuguilla.

Am. Aqui eſtán. Al. dos ſábanas, dos almohádas de cama, dos pares de calçónes de lienco, tres de calçétas.

A. Aqui eſtán.

Al. Vna dozena de pares de eſcarpínes.

Am. No ay a quí mas que ocho.

Al. Pues quatro fáltan a la labandéra pedírle he que de quenta dellos, y ſi ella los perdió que los págue.

Am. Anda, que válen quatro eſcarpínes viéjos y rótos?

Al. Yten mas dos eſcofiétas y quatro tocadóres, média dozéna de pañizuélos de narízes.

Am. Aqui eſtá todo.

Al. Dos meſas de mantéles, y diez ſervilléras.

Am. Aqui eſtán.

Al. Tres toallas, y vn frutéro, y dos cuellos de encáje con ſus puños.

Am. Todo eſtá aqui que nada falta.

Al. Pues doblémos lo, y pongámos lo en el árca.

Am. Como me Llamáys para que os ayúde a éſto, no me Llamárades para que os ayudára al almuérzo.

Al. Alli tengo guardados vnos eſcamóchos que ſobráran a mi ámo.

Am. Quiero primero barrér éſta ſala y adereçárla.

Al. Entre tanto limpiaré yo la ropa, ſave de la eſcobilla?

Am. Veſla alli colgada de aquel clávo, que ſi fuéra pérro ya te uviéra mordído.

Al. O quanto polvo tiene eſta capa?

Am. Sacude la primero con vna vára.

Al. Ama, mas que bien hechos eſtán eſtos calçones?

Am. Tanbien entiendo yo de éſſo, como puerca de freno.

Al. Pues que entiende?

Am. Al lo que a mi me importa ſi tu pregun-

to them.

N. Heere they are. Al. a paire of ſheetes, two pillowes, two paire of linnen breeches next the skin, three paire of linnen hoſe vnder the ſtockings.

N. Heere they are.

A. A dozen paire of ſockes.

N. There are but eight heere.

A. Then foure wants, I will require of the Laundreſſe that ſhe giue account of them, and if ſhe hath loſt them that ſhe pay for them.

N. Goe, what are foure old broken ſockes worth?

A. Alſo more, two night coifes and foure night kerchiefes, halfe a dozen of handkerchiefes.

N. Here is all.

A. Two table clothes, and ten table napkins.

N. Here they are.

*A. Three towels, and one * fruit cloth and two ruffe bands wrought with their ruffes at hand.*

N. All is here, nothing is wanting.

A. Then let vs fold it, and let vs put it in the cheſt.

N. Wherefore call you mee, that I ſhould help you to doe this, and would not call me that I ſhould help you to eat your breakefaſt?

A. There haue I ſaued certaine fragments which my maſter left.

N. I will firſt ſweepe this hall and dreſſe it.

A. In the meane while will I bruſh the clothes: doe you know where the bruſh is?

N. See there hanged vpon that naile, that if it were a beare it would now haue bit thee.

A. Oh what a deale of duſt hath this cloke?

N. Beat it out firſt with a wand.

A. Nurſe, how exceeding well are theſe breeches made.

N. I haue as good knowledge therein as a ſow in a bridle.

A. What haue you knowledge in then?

N. In that which belongeth vnto mee, if thou

* *Fruit cloth to couer the fruit when it is carried to the table.*

preguntáras por una baſquiña, una ſáya entera, una ropa, un manto, o un cuerpo, una gorguera, de una toca, y coſas ſemejantes, ſupiéra te yo reſpondér.

thou hadſt asked of a peticoate, a womans caſſocke, a womans gowne, a mantell, a paire of bodies, a gorget, or a womans head attire, and like matters, I could haue answered thee.

Al. De manera que no ſabe léer, mas de por el libro de ſu aldéa.

A. So then the Prieſt cannot ſay Maſſe but in his owne booke.

Am. Quieres tu, que ſea yo, como el ymbidióſo, que ſu cuidado es en lo que no le va ni le viéne.

N. Wilt thou, that I ſhould be as the enuious perſon which ſetteth his mind on that which belongs not vnto him.

Al. Siempre es virtúd ſavér, aunque ſean cóſas que pareçe que no nos ympórtan.

A. Yet alwaies it is a vertue to know, although they be things which ſeeme not to appertaine vnto vs.

Am. Bien ſé yo, que tu ſabrás hazér una bellaquería, y ésta no es virtúd.

N. I know well, that thou knoweſt well how to play the knaue, and that I am ſure is no vertue.

Al. El ſavérla hazér no es malo, el uſárla ſi.

A. To know how to doe it is not euill, but to vſe it, it is euill.

Am. ✲ Siempre oy dezír que quien las ſábe las táñe.

N. I alwaies haue heard ſay, he that can play, playeth.

Al. ✲ No ſino que quien ha las hechas ha las ſoſpéchas.

A. No but whoſoeuer is bad, hath ſuſpition of another to be bad.

Am. Pues valláco que he hecho yo?

N. Why knaue what haue I done?

Al. No mas de hazérme regañái algunas vézes.

A. Nothing elſe, but make mee fret and vex my ſelfe ſometimes.

Ama. No me des tu ocaſión.

N. Doe not thou giue me occaſion?

Al. Eſtonces muchas merçédes, quando le doy ocaſion, es meneſtér que me perdóne, que quando no ſe la doy, poca amiſtád me haze.

*A. Then I thanke you hartily, when I giue you occaſion it is neceſſarie that you pardon mee, that when I giue you no occaſion, you doe me little * curteſie.*

* *Meaning then ſhe doth not forgiue him any thing, ſeeing he maketh no offence vnto her.*

Ama. A ora hermáno dexate de retóricas y has lo que tu ámo te mandó.

N. Now Brother, leaue your Rhetoricke, and doe that thy M. commanded thee.

Al. Si haré aunque bien créo que no por éſſo me tengo de aſentár con el ala meſa.

A. So will I doe, although I beleeue, for all that I am not to ſit at table with him.

Ama. A lomenos eſcuſarás de que el no te aſiénte en el rábo.

N. Thou muſt needs beare with that, for that he doth not ſet it on your bum.

Al. Yo voy a enſillár el cavállo, a dios paredes haſta la buelta.

A. I goe to ſaddle the horſe, farewell wals till my returne.

Diálogo ſegúndo, en el qual, ſe tráta *de comprár y vendér jóyas y otras coſas* entre un Hidálgo llamado Thomas, y ſu *mugér Margaríta, y un Mercadér, y un Platéro.*

Th. ADonde queréis que vamos Señóra?

Ma. Vámos a la platería, y comprarémos algunas piéças de plata.

Th. Y de alli?

Ma. Yrémos a la lonja para comprár algunas cóſas.

Th. En el nombre de Dios, entrémos en ésta tiénda.

Ma. Plegue a el, ſea con pie derecho.

Th. A Señor guarde Dios a v. m.

Pl. Y venga con vuéſtras merçedes.

Th. Mande nos moſtrár, algunas buénas piéças.

Pl. Que géneros quiere v. m. táças, copas o jarros, fuentes, platos, y eſcudillas, es lomas neceſſário.

Th. Y tanbien copas de ſalvo, y ſaléros, vinagéras.

Pl. Ola móço, ſaca aqui toda eſſa plata de el arca.

Ma. Veamos aquellos candeléros y deſpaviladéras.

Th. Si eſtos braſerillos de méſa eſtuviéran Sinceládos fuéran mejóres.

Pl. Otros dizen, que la ſinceladura es allegadéro de miérda, hablando con perdón de vueſtras merçédes.

Ma. No véo aquí agua manil ningúno.

Pl. Aqui eſtá vno ſobre dorádo y ſinçeládo con ſu fuente de la miſma labór.

Th. Yo quiſiéra toda la baxilla de una miſma labór que no diferençiáran vnas pieças de otras.

Pl. Por eſſo dízen, que tantas opiniónes ay como cabeças: otros dízen que la variedád es la que agráda.

Th. Es verdád, peró la variedád ha de ſer de coſas entéras, y por que hazér vna capa de remiéndos, no puede agradár a nádie.

Pl. Con-

The ſecond Dialogue, wherin is handled *to buy and ſell Iewels and other* things, betweene a Gentleman called *Thomas, and his wife Margaret, and a Merchant, and a Goldſmith.*

Th. WHither will you that wee goe Ladie?

Ma. Let vs go to the Goldſmiths ſhops, and we will buy ſome pieces of plate.

Th. And from thence whither?

Ma. We wil go to the Exchange to buy ſome things.

Th. In the name of God let vs goe into this ſhop.

Ma. I pray God it be in good time, luckely.

Th. Oh maſter Goldſmith, God ſaue you.

Go. And God be in your company.

Th. Cauſe one to ſhew vs ſome good peeces.

Go. What kinds will your worſhips ſee, plaine cups, deep cups, or pots, ewers, platters, or diſhes, all theſe are the moſt neceſſarie.

Th. And alſo cups with couers, and ſalt-ſellers, and bottles for vineger and oyle.

Go. Ho ſirra, take out heere all this plate out of this cheſt.

Ma. Let vs ſee theſe candleſtickes and ſnuffers.

Th. If thoſe chaſindiſhes for the table were engrauen they were better.

Go. Others ſay, that the grauing is a gathering of filth, ſpeaking with reuerence of your worſhips.

M. I ſee no baſen here.

G. Here is one gilt ouer, and graued with his ewer of the ſame worke.

T. I would haue all a cupboord of plate all of one worke, that there might not differ one peece from another.

G. Therefore they ſay, ſo many men ſo many minds, others ſay varietie breeds delight.

T. It is true, but that varietie is to be of whole entire things by themſelues, for to make a cloake with patches can pleaſe no bodie.

Go. Agree

Pl. Conçierte ſe v. m. conmígo en el préçio, que yo ſe la daré acabáda dentro de pocas días de la hechura que la quiſiére.

Go. Agree with me for the price, and I will make it vp for you within theſe few daies, of what faſhion you will haue it.

Ma. Siempre en las tardanças ay peligro, y vale mas páxaro en mano que bueytre bolándo.

M. Alwaies delaies breed danger, and better a bird in hand then a vulture flying.

Th. Pues eſcoja de ay v.m. les pieças que mas le agradáren.

T. Then chooſe you out thoſe peeces which beſt ſhall like you.

Ma. Eſte ſalpimentéro y éſta copa con ſu ſobre copa, y éſte pichél, y éſta calderéta, y éſta porcelána ſean las priméras.

M. This ſalt and pepper box, and this cup with his couer, and this pot made ewer wiſe, and this kettle of ſiluer, and this broad cup to drinke in are the beſt.

Th. A como hémos de dár por * el marco de eſtas pieças ?

Th. What are we to pay for the halfe pound of theſe peeces ?

* *Marco de plato is worth xxxij.s. Engliſh beſide the faſhion.*

Pl. Por el marco de las llanas me ha de dár. v. m. a çien reáles por las ſinçeládas, a quinze ducádos y por las doradas a treynta ducados.

Go. For the halfe pound of theſe plaine peeces your worſhip is to giue mee fiftie ſhillings, for the engraning fifteene ducates, and for the gilt thirtie ducates.

Th. Si el pedír fuera dár, no ſe avía hecho mala haziénda oy, peró de ✻ el dicho a el hécho ay gran trecho.

Th. If asking were giuing, you had not made an ill match to day, but there is a great diſtance betwixt the word and the deed.

Pl. Al de menos no lo daré yo por lo, que. v. m. me ha ofreçído haſta agora.

Go. At leaſt I will not giue it for that you haue offered me as yet.

Th. Eſtá tan caro, que yo no ſé que le ofrezca ſi no es vna * báxa.

Th. You are ſo deere that I know not what I may offer for it, if there bee no abatement.

* *A daunce ſo called. Alſo an abatement.*

Pl. Eſſa yo la dançaré deſpues que. v.m. aya tañído ſu álta.

Go. That will I daunce, after your worſhip hath ſtrooke the treble.

Tho. Mi mas alta Señór, es a ſeis ducados la llána, y a çien reales, la ſinçeláda, y la doráda, a veinte ducádos.

Th. My higheſt is ſix ducates the plaine, and fiftie ſhillings the engrauen, and the gilt twentie ducates.

Pl. Muy bien deſpachádo yva yo, mas me tiénen ami de cóſta.

Go. This buſineſſe is well diſpatched now, they coſt me more.

Th. Pues Señór torne a dançár a vér en que pára.

Th. But Sir, come backe and dance againe, to ſee vpon what you ſticke.

Pl. En cada género, le quitaré a. v. m. dos ducádos y no mas.

Go. In euery kinde of them I will abate two duckets and no more.

Th. Muy mal dançó. v. m. no le tóco mas.

Th. You daunce very ill, I play no more.

Pl. Pues yo le aſegúro a. v. m. que no lo halle mas varáto en la calle.

Go. But I aſſure your worſhip that you cannot finde better cheape in the ſtreet.

Th. Calle que ſi hallare, que donde vna ✻ puerta ſe cierra ciento ſe ábren.

Th. Hold your peace, for I will finde: for where one doore ſhuts a hundred doe open.

Ma. Si ha de valér mi voto, dezír le he.

Ma. If my voice may preuaile, Ile ſtrike the ſtroke.

Pl. Diga

Go. Let

Pl. Diga le v.m. que le ſoy muy devóto.

Go. Let your worſhip ſpeake on, for I am much deuoted.

Ma. Pues otro tanto como baxó el platéro, ſuba el Señór Tómas y no ſe hable mas.

Ma. Then ſo much as the Goldſmith hath abated, ſo much let Maſter Thomas riſe, and let there be no more words.

Pl. Porque ſu palabra de v.m. no buelva atrás, &c.

Go. For that your Worſhips word may bee taken, &c.

Th. No quería v. m. mas, ora peſelo, peſár malo le dé dios a el diablo.

Th. You can deſire no more, now weigh it, God giue ill weight to the diuell.

Pl. Lleven lo a cáſa que allá lo peſarémos.

Go. Carry it to your houſe, there wee will weigh it.

Th. Móço carga con todo y Lleva lo a caſa.

Th. Sirra, take vp all this and carry it home.

Pl. Han de bolvér ſe luego vueſtras merçédes?

Go. Are your Worſhips to come backe againe this way by and by?

Th. No haſta de aquí a dos oras, que ýmos a comprár otras coſas.

Th. Not till within this two houres, for we goe to buy other things.

Pl. Si v.m. es ſervído de que le acompañe, hazér lo he.

Go. If it pleaſe you that I goe with you, I will.

Ma. Guarde Dios a v. m. que no querémos mas compañía.

Ma. God keepe you, we will no more company.

Th. En ninguna coſa gaſto el dinero, de mejor gána que en pláta.

Th. In nothing I ſpend money with a better will than in plate.

Ma. Lo que ſe gaſta en plata no es gaſtár, ſi no trocár pieças chicas por pieças grandes.

Ma. That which is laid out in plate is not waſted, but to change ſmall peeces for great peeces.

Th. Y tanbien por que cabe en ella lo que dízen que no cabe en un ſaco que es honra y provecho.

*Th. And alſo there is contained in it that they ſay is not contained in a ſacke, which is * honour and profit.*

Ma. Si, por que ſi hombre ſe quiere ſervír con vídrio o china, o bárro, mas cueſta lo que ſe quiebra entre año que la hechura de la plata.

*Ma. Yea, for if a man will ſerue his turne with glaſſe, or * China mettall, or earth, that which is broken thereof, coſts more in a yeare than the faſhion of the plate.*

Th. Y con vna baxilla que hombre cómpra vna vez, tiene para hijos, niétos, y viſniétos.

Th. And for a cupboord that a man buyeth once, he is furniſhed for his children, nephewes, and nephewes children.

Ma. Aora vámos a la joyería.

Ma. Now let vs goe to the place where they ſell Iewels.

Th. Eſſe es vn camíno que yo hago de muy mala gana.

Th. This is a way that I goe vnwillingly.

Ma. Por que razón?

Ma. What is the reaſon?

Th. Por que éſtas joyas ſon como las donzéllas, que miéntras eſtán encérradas ſon de mucho valór, y en ſacando las fuéra, le pierden todo y no válen nada.

Th. Becauſe theſe Iewels are as maidens, that while they are maids and kept in, they are of much value, and in taking them abroad they looſe all, and are worth nothing.

Ma. Si peró, lo que ſe vſa no ſe eſcúſa.

Ma. Yea, but that which is a cuſtome cannot be ſhunned, cuſtome needs no excuſe.

* *Honor and profit is not held together in one bag.*
* *i. the fine diſhes of earth painted ſuch as are brought from Venice.*

Th. Al

Th. But

Th. Al mal vſo quebrár le la pierna.

Th. But it is good to breake the legges of an ill cuſtome.

Ma. No queráis ſeñór ponér vos puertas a el campo ni coregír el mundo, que anſi le halláſtes y anſi le havéis de dexár.

*Ma. I would not haue you Sir * make doores for the fields, and correct the whole world: for ſo you found it, and ſo ſhall you leaue it.*

* i. to doe things impoſſible.

Th. Ora pues corra ol rio por do ſuele, pues ſe arendo la renta con éſtas condiçiónes.

Th. Why then let the riuer runne where it was wont, ſeeing the thing was hired with theſe conditions.

Ma. Entrémos en eſta tiénda que es la mas rica.

Ma. Let vs goe into this ſhop, for it is the richeſt.

Me. Que manda v. m. ſeñór cavalléro, que ha meneſtér?

Me. What doth your worſhip command, what haue you need of?

Th. Yo ninguna coſa, éſta ſeñóra, muchas.

Th. I of nothing, this Gentlewoman of many things.

Me. Pues pida ſu merçéd, que tódo ſe le dará aquí a muy buen précio.

Me. Then let her require what, and all ſhall be giuen her very good cheape.

Ma. Mueſtre me acá algunos tocádos, guirnaldíllas, rapóſos, randas, deſhilados, tocas de todas ſuertes, y tan bien venga la olanda delgada, cambray, y otras ſuertes de liéncos.

Ma. Shew me ſome womens head attire, garland head attire, wires of ſiluer, bone worke or bone lace, ſtitched worke, head attire of all ſorts, and alſo bring fine holland, cambricke, and other ſorts of linnen.

Me. Entre v. m. que todo lo verá aquí.

Me. May it pleaſe your worſhip come in, for you ſhall ſee all here.

Ma. Todo eſto es obra toſco mas * prima la quiéro.

Ma. All this is groſſe worke, I would ſee more principall.

* Prima, i chiefe, principall or a ſhee coſen german.

Th. Para prima Señora no es buena la hija de vueſtro tío?

Th. Will not your Vncles daughter ſerue you for a coſen?

Ma. Es muy gorda aquella, y por eſſo quería otra mas delgáda.

Ma. This is very courſe, and therefore would I haue other finer.

Me. Pues en eſta caxa verá. v. m. el primór del mundo, todo es obra de Milán.

Me. Then in this cheſt ſhall your worſhip ſee the principalleſt that is, all is worke of Milan.

Th. Obra de Milán veeme y no me tangas.

*Th. Worke of Milan * ſee me but touch me not.*

* Becauſe they are toies, if you touch them they breake in peeces.

Ma. Nada de eſto me conténta.

Ma. None of theſe pleaſeth me.

Me. Eſpanto me como ſe caſó v. m. ſiendo tan mal contentadíza.

Me. I wonder how your worſhip married being ſo diuers to pleaſe your fancy.

Th. Fue por que vído a el nóbio de noche, y como dizen entonçes todos los gatos ſon párdos.

Th. It was becauſe ſhe ſaw the bridegroome by night, and as they ſay, then all cats are grey cied.

Ma. Mueſtre me otra mejór obra ſi tiene, y dexeſe de preguntár quantos años tengo.

Ma. Shew me ſome better worke, if you haue any, and leaue of to aske how old I am.

Me. Aora éſta es la última prueva, ve aquí v. m. óbra de argentería ve allí de aljófar, eſtótra de abalório, y éſta de pérlas, eſcoja como peras en tabáque.

Me. Now is the laſt triall, ſee heere worke of ſiluer, there of ſmall pearle, this other of blacke Bugles, and this of pearle, chooſe out as peares in a basket.

Ma. Por cierto en ruin háto, poco ay que eſcojér.

Ma. Verily in a bad flocke, this is but a ſmall choiſe.

Me. A

Me. Call

Me. A eſto llama v.m. ruín, réo que es de peór condición que el philóſopho Demócrito, que no halló coſa en el mundo que no tubiéſſe fálca.

Me. Call you this bad, I beleeue that you are of a worſe condition then the Philoſopher Democritus, which found nothing in the world, which had not a fault.

Th. Eſſo ſin Demócrito lo dígo yo, que no ay coſa perfecta en el mundo.

Th. I ſay this without Democritus, that there is nothing perfect in the world.

Me. Eſſo verificárſe ha, en coſas naturales, que en las de el arte puede avér perfeçión cada vna en ſu género.

Me. This is to be verified in natural things, for in thoſe things of Art, there may be perfection, euery thing in his kinde.

Th. Pues que penſáis vos que es el arte, ſino ymitadór de la natura, y ſi en la natura no ay perfeçión menos la avrá en el arte ſu imitadór.

Th. Why what thinke you that art is any thing elſe but a follower of nature, and if nature hath not her perfection, much leſſe ſhall there be any in her follower.

Me. Yo ſeñor no ſoy philóſopho, ni quiero contendér con v. m. mis mercaderías querría que tubiéſſen ſu perfeçión en el préçio.

Me. Sir I am not a Philoſopher, neither wil I contend with your worſhip, I would my merchandizes had their perfection in the price.

Ma. Si no le tiénen en ſu valór, no le puéden tenér en el préçio.

Ma. If they haue not in their worth, they cannot haue it in their price.

Me. Aora ſeñora véa v. m. lo que mas le conténta, y tome lo que no tengo otra coſa mejór.

Me. Now Ladie, ſee that which beſt likes you, and take it, for I haue no better.

Ma. Eſte tocádo, eſte cuéllo, ésta gargantílla de perlas, eſte regalillo, y eſte avanillo, eſta dos pares deguentes de flores, y eſta preſina, me paréçen bien, todo lo de más no.

*Ma. This kerchiefe, this band, this necklace of pearle, this muffe, and * this fanne, theſe two paire of gloues perfumed, and this girdle likes me, all the reſt I care not for.*

* But not of feathers, for they vſe no feather fans in Spaine.

Th. Quanto monta todo eſſo?

Th. How much comes all this to?

Me. Todo monta tres çientos reáles.

*Me. All comes to * three hundred rials, or ſixpences.*

* i. Seauen pound ten ſhillings.

Th. Tres çientos áños eſté de vn lado quien tal diére.

Th. Let him lie three hundred yeares on one ſide that ſhould giue ſo much.

Me. Pues por que no le alcançe a v. m. éſſa maldición dos çientos, y ochénta.

Me. Then becauſe this curſe may not light vpon you, giue two hundred and fourefcore.

Th. No entiendo bien eſſa cuenta.

Th. I vnderſtand not well this reckoning.

Me. * Dos vèzes ciento y quarenta.

Me. Twiſe a hundred, and twiſe fortie.

* Dos vezes, ſe refiére a ciento y tambien al quarenta.

Ma. Buena eſtá la copla, no han de ſér mas que dos çiéntos y cinquenta en todo.

Ma. This copla is well, it ſhould be no more then two hundred and fiftie in all.

Me. Con v. m. el perdér es ganár, pues manda que ſe a anſi, yo no hablaré mas palábra.

Me. With your worſhip to loſe is gaine, ſeeing you command ſo, I will not ſpeake a word more.

Th. Para que quiere hablár mas, ſi con las habládas ha hecho ſu agóſto.

Th. Why would you ſpeake any more, if with that which is ſpoken you haue made your harueſt.

Me. Por çierto ſeñór de eſte agóſto, poca

Me. Truly Sir, of this harueſt I haue gotten

ca cofecha he cogído.

Th. Señór ſi hiziéra buena ſementéra cogiéra mas.

Me. Aun tengo aquí otras muchas mercaderías muy curioſas que v. m. no haviſto.

Ma. Que ſon?

Me. Sartíllas, joyéles, cintas de reſplandór, brocadétes, rodétes cofias de oro, arandélas, alcacuéllos, gorguéras de réd, camíſas labradas, gargantillas de pérlas, y ámbar, todo género de afeite y de perfúmes, véa v. m. ſi le contenta algo.

Ma. Otro dia vernémos mas de eſpácio para ver todo eſſo.

Th. Pareçeme ſeñór que es vueſtro ofício, como el de los torneros engaña mucháchos y ſaca dineros.

Me. Pues es mi Señóra Margaríta muchácho?

Th. Baſta que ſea engañáda.

Me. A fee que no ha de ſavér poco quien la ha de engañár.

Th. Engañárſe ha ella meſma a ſi miſma.

Me. Como?

Th. Dando dinéros por eſtas bugerías que relúzen y no es óro todo, y quando váya a caſa, ſe hallará con no nada entre dos plátos.

Me. Para que es el dinero ſi no para luzírſe con ello.

Th. Se que eſto aunque relúze no lúze.

Ma. Ya os he dicho Señór, que os vais al corriénte de la de mas génte, y pues os caſaſtes como los ótros páſſa por donde los ótros, no andeis por los eſtrémos que todo hombre eſtremádo no eſtá vn de do de loco, éſtas ſon cargas de el caſamiénto.

Th. La ayuda de el eſcaravájo que dexa la carga quanto le ayúdan.

Ma. Aora

ten but a little fruit.

Th. If you had made your ſeed time better, you had reaped more.

Me. Yet haue I many other merchandizes very fine, that your worſhip hath not ſeene yet.

Ma. What are they?

Me. Chaines of leat, Amber, or ſuch like, tablet Iewels, girdles faire to ſee to, cloth of Gold the worſer ſort, head rolles, coifes of Gold, ſupporters, gorgets of net-worke, wrought ſhirts or ſmockes, necke laces of Pearles and Amber, all kinde of painting, and perfumes, ſee if you like any.

Ma. We will come another day, more at leaſure to ſee all this.

*Th. It ſeemes to me Sir, that your trade is as that of the * Turners, which deceiues Boyes and gets money.*

* i. Make tops for children.

Me. Why is my Lady Margaret a Boy?

Th. It ſufficeth that ſhe be deceiued.

Me. In faith, he is not to know a little that muſt deceiue her.

Th. She her ſelfe will deceiue her ſelfe.

Me. How?

Th. In giuing money for theſe childiſh toies, which ſhine and yet are not all gold, and when ſhe goes home, it will bee found nothing betweene two platters.

Me. Why is money made, but to make ſhew therewith?

Th. I know that this, although it glitter double, it ſoines not.

Ma. I haue already told you Sir, that you goe the common courſe of the moſt, and ſeeing you haue married as other men haue, paſſe that way as other men doe, goe not by extremities for euery man that is in his extremities, is not a fingers breadth from a foole, theſe be the charges of mariage.

Th. The helpe of mariage like the helpe of the Beetle vnder the cow-turd, which forſakes the burden as ſoone as they helpe him.*

* The nature of the Beetle in the Cow-turd when another comes to help him, leaues all: ſo in mariage, when another comes to helpe to maintaine his wife, he forſakes her.

Ma. Sir,

Ma. Aora Señór éſſas ſon pendéncias que ſe han de reñír en caſa vámonos.

Ma. Sir, theſe are quarrels to be chidden out at home. Let vs goe.

Th. Vámos Señóra, toma vuéſtro dinero Señór mercadér.

Th. Let vs goe, take your money Maſter Merchant.

Me. Yo quedo muy contento y beſo a v. m. las manos y vea ſi me manda ótra coſa.

Me. I am very well content, and kiſſe your hands, and ſee if you command any thing elſe.

Th. Que con ſalúd que tengamos, nunca mas nos veámos.

Th. So we may haue health that we neuer ſee one another more.

Me. Por çierto Señór, yo no ſoy tan yngráto, que cada dia quería vér a v. m. por mi cáſa.

Me. Truly Sir I am not ſo ingratefull, but that euery day I would ſee your worſhip by my houſe.

Th. Yo créo que queríades vér mi bólſa mas no a mi.

Th. I beleeue you would ſee my purſe rather than me.

Me. No ſoy tan codiçióſo como a v. m. le parézco.

Me. I am not ſo couetous as I ſeeme vnto you.

Th. No digo yo que lo ſoys, pero apoſtaré que queréis mas un real de a quatro, que uno de a dos.

Th. I ſay not that you are, but I will lay a wager, that you had rather haue two ſhillings than one.

Me. Por adivino le podrían a v. m. caſtigár.

Me. They might well puniſh you for a ſoothſayer.

Th. Lo que con los ojos véo con el dédo lo adivíno.

Th. That which with the eies I ſee, I conieƈture with my finger.

Ma. A Dios mercadér.

Ma. God be with you Merchant.

Me. Beſo a v. m. las manos mi Señóra.

Me. Ladie I kiſſe your hands.

Ma. Vámos a ora a la lonja a comprár ſédas.

Ma. Let vs goe now to the Exchange to buy ſilkes.

Th. Que queréis comprár Señora?

Th. What would you buy?

Ma. Que terciopélo raſo, damáſco, tafetán, riço, gorgarán, chameléte, lanillas para veſtíros a vos y ami.

Ma. What, plaine veluet, damaske, tafata, vncut veluet, grogram, chamlet, ſarge, to cloath you and my ſelfe.

Th. Para eſſo es meneſtér otro dia y a es tarde vamos a comér que mañána yrémos a comprár eſſo.

Th. For all this another day will ſerue, it is late now let vs goe to dinner, for to morrow we will goe to buy this.

Ma. Vamos pues aunque yo mas quiſiéra que quedára oy todo hecho, que no tenér que ſalír mañana otra buelta.

Ma. Let vs goe then, although I would rather that all were done to day, than to come foorth another turne to morrow.

Th. Anda, que bien os holgáis depaſſeár un rato, para que me queréis hazér entendér de el çiélo cebólla?

Th. Goe, for you take good pleaſure to walke a while, wherefore you would make me beleeue the moone is made of a greene cheeſe?

Ma. No ſeáis maliçióſo que no medraréis.

Ma. Be not malitious, for you ſhall thriue neuer the ſooner.

Th. Muchácho corre, llama a el platéro que venga a peſár la plata y por ſu dinéro.

Th. Boy, runne call the Goldſmith, that he come to weigh the plate and fetch his money.

Diálogo tercéro, de un combíte, entre çinco cavalléros amígos, llamádos, Guzman, Rodrígo, don Lorénço, Mendoça, y Oſório, un maeſtre ſala, y un paje, en el qual, ſe trata, de coſas perteneçiéntes a un combíte con otras pláticas, y dichos agúdos.

G. OLa, eſtá ay algun paje?
P. Señor.
G. Sáues a cáſa de don Rodrigo?

P. Si Señór.
G. Pues vée allá, dile que le béſo las mános, y que ſi le paréce óra de que nos veámos.

P. Aquí eſtá un criádo de el Señor don Lorénço.
G. Entre.
Cr. Don Lorénço mi Señór, béſa a v. m. las mános y embía a ſabér ſi eſtá en caſa, por que tiene un negócio que tratár con. v. m.

G. Que beſo a ſu merçed las manos, y que yo fuera a la Suya, a beſárſe las ſi no tuviéra una ocupación forçóſa que eſperár, la qual tanbien toca a ſu merçéd que ſi viniére, ſerá el bien venído y ſe tratará de todo.
Cr. Beſo a v. m. las manos.
G. Anda con Dios, ola Dezíd a el maeſtre ſala que hága ponér éſſas méſas, que vernán ya los convidádos.
M. Señór v. m. como ſe quiére ſervír oy, ala Yraliana, o ala Françéza, o a la Yngleſa, o a la Flaménca, o a la Todéſca?

G. De todos eſſos eſtrémos me ſacád vn médio, no quiero tantas çerimónias, como el Yraliáno, ni quiero tanta curioſidád, como el Françés, ni quiero tanta abundáncia, como el Yngles, ni quiero que la comída ſea tan larga, como el Flaménco ni tan úmida

The third Dialogue, of a banquet betweene fiue Gentlemen friends, called Guzman, Rodricke, Sir Lorenço, Mendoça, Oſorio, a Gentleman Vſher, and a Page, in which are handled things belonging to a banquet, with other ſpeeches and wittie ſayings.

G. HOe, *is there any Page there?*
P. Sir.
G. Doſt thou know maſter Rodrick his houſe?
P. Yea Sir.
G. Then go thither and tell him that I commend me to him, and if hee thinke good now, that we may meet together.
P. Here is a ſeruant of Sir Lorenço.
G. Let him come in.
S. Sir Lorenço my maſter commends him vnto your worſhip, and ſends me to know whether you be at home, for hee hath a buſineſſe to entreat of with you.
G. I thanke him, and I would haue come vnto his houſe to haue ſaluted him, if I had not tarried heere about a buſineſſe of importance, the which alſo concernes him, if hee come he ſhall be welcome, and wee will talke at large.
S. I take my leaue of your worſhip.
G. God be with you. Hoe tell the Gentleman-vſher that he make the tables to be couered, for the gueſts will come by and by.
V. Sir, will your Worſhip haue your ſeruice to day, after the Italian, after the French, after the Engliſh, after the Flemiſh, or after the Dutch manner?
G. Of all theſe extremes take me out one meane, I will not haue ſo many ceremonies as the Italian, neither will I ſo much curioſitie as the French, neither ſuch abundandance as the Engliſh, neither will I that the meale be ſo long as the Flemmings, nor ſo moiſt as the

úmida como el tudéſco, mas de todos eſtos eſtremos, componéme vn médio a la Eſpañóla.

Dutch, but of all theſe extremes, compound me a meane after the Spaniſh faſhion.

M. Anſi ſe hará como v. m. lo mánda.

V. So ſhall it be as your Worſhip commandeth.

G. Vueſtro mayór cuidádo ſéa que la comída ſea caliénte y la bevída fría.

*G. Let your chiefeſt care be that the meat be hot, and * the drinke coole.*

* *In Spaine they coole their wine by ſetting the flaguns in ſnow water.*

M. Que vínos quiere v. m.

V. What wines will your Worſhip haue?

G. De todos géneros, bláncos, tinto, haloque, claréte, cándia, ribadáuia, ſan Martín, tóro, y ſidra, porque aya de todo.

*G. Of all ſorts, white Sacke, deepe red brackiſh wine, Hallocke, Claret, Candie, * Ribadavia, * S. Martin, Toro, and Cider, for that there may be of euery ſort.*

* *Ribadáuia a whitiſh Sacke growing in Galicia about a village called Ribadáuia.*

P. Aquí viéne el Señór don Rodrígo.

P. Here commeth maſter Rodericke.

G. O Señór. v. m. y las buenos áños.

G. Oh Sir, you are as welcome as the good yeere.

* *Wine of Saint Martin the moſt delicate wine of Spaine, growing about S. Martin, a towne in the kingdome of Toledo in Spaine.*

R. Beſo a. v. m. las manos.

R. Sir I thanke you heartily.

G. Como eſtá. v. m. paréçe que coxéa.

G. How doe you Sir, it ſeemes you halt.

R. Díme vn golpe a el apcár de el cavállo en eſta eſpiníla.

R. I hit my ſelfe a blow in lighting from my horſe, in this ſhin bone.

G. En ora mala ſéa, veámos ſi es algo.

G. In ill time, let vs ſee if it be any thing.

R. ✻ No ſeñór, ſi no que es como dízen dolór de cóbdo, dolór de eſpóſo, duele mucho y dúra poco.

*R. No Sir, it is (as they ſay) like the paine of a blow on the elbow, or the ſorrow of a bridegroome, * it grieueth much and is quickly done.*

* *Becauſe they haue had ſmall conuerſation together to increaſe loue.*

G. Mas vale anſi.

G. It is the better.

R. Como tiene. v. m. a mi ſeñóra doña Maria y a toda ſu caſa?

R. How doth my Lady Marie your wife, and all your family.

G. A ſervício de. v. m. aunque ella (por no avér me ynbídia) díxo, que pues yo comía con mis amígos, ella ſe quería yr a comér con ſus amígas.

G. At your ſeruice, although ſhe ſaies (not becauſe ſhe enuies me) that ſince I banquet with my friends, ſhe would goe to dinner to hir friends.

R. Hízo ſu merçéd muy diſcretaménte, en pagár le a. v. m. en la miſma ✻ monéda.

R. She dealt very diſcreetly to pay you with the ſame money.

M. Todos eſtos ſeñóres conbidádos eſtán aqui, y la comída a púnto quando vuéſſas merçedes fuéren ſervídos, ſe podran aſentár.

V. All the Gentlemen that are inuited are here, and dinner is readie, when your Worſhips pleaſe, you may ſit downe.

G. ✻ Señór don Loréngo. v. m. tiéne las mañas de el Rey que adonde no eſtá no le hállan.

G. Sir Lorenço you haue the propertie of a King, that where he is not, there they finde him not.

L. Y v. m. quiere pareçérſe Alçína de quien dize Orlando que por engáño, tray álos hombres a gozár de ſus regálos.

L. And you will bee like Alcina of whom Orlando maketh mention, which brought men to take pleaſure in her dainties to entrap them.

G. Peró, no ſerán vueſſas merçédes convertídos en animáles como ella hazía.

G. But you ſhall not be turned into beaſts, as ſhe turned them.

L. ✻ No me aſegúro, que dexe de bolverſe

L. I am not aſſured of that, for ſome of vs may

vérſe alguno en çórra.

R. ✻ De buen vino quien quiera ſe caça vna en el áño.

G. Cada vno ſu alma en ſu palma, qual el tiempo tal ſea el tiénto. Ea Señores tómen ſillas v. s. mercedes y ſienten ſe.

L. Déxenos v. m. ante todas coſas contenplár vn rato la curioſidád de la méſa.

R. ✻ No tiene mas pieças vn juego de maſtre corál, que eſtán hechas de las ſervillétas.

O. Yo aqui véo vna galéra, que no le fálta mas, que la chúſma y palaménta.

M. Pues acá eſtá vn cavalloque no ſé yo, ſi el cavallo de Tróya éra tan bien hécho.

L. Ami me ha caído enſuerte el eſcudo de Hércules.

R. Y eſte que eſtá aqui, que es ?

M. A mi me paréçe, ques vna pirámida de las de Egípto.

O. O es el ſepulcro de Máuſalo, o la torre de Babel.

G. Aóra déxen eſſo vueſſas marçédes y ſiéntenſe, ſi, ſon ſervídos.

R. No ſe puede dexár de mirár el caſtíllo de la enſaláda.

L. Por mi vida, que no tiéne mejór viſta el de Milán.

G. Si cada coſa ſe ha de mirár de por ſi, yr ſe nos ha el dia en flóres. Cada vna tire ſu ſilla, que éſta no es méſa de cumplimiéntos.

O. No los déve avér entre amigos.

G. Yo ſoy ynimiçiſſimo de çerimónias.

R. ✻ A mi no me paréçen bien ningunas, ſi no ſon las que haze la yglésia.

G. Ola, plátos, tome v. m. eſſe Señór don Lorénço.

L. Haga v. m. paraſi, que lo miſmo hará cada vno.

R. No ſe qual ſea mejór v'ſo eſte que vſámos en Eſpáña o el que ſe v'ſa en ynglatérra.

G. Que

may ſuffer himſelfe to be turned into a Fox.*

* i. To be drunk.

R. Whoſoeuer loues good wine, hunts the Fox once a yeere.*

* i. Whips the cat, or is drunke once a yeere.

G. Euery one holds free will in his hands, as the time requires ſo frame thy deſires. Goe to Gentlemen, betake your ſelues to your chaires and ſit downe.

L. Suffer vs I pray aboue all things to behold a while the curiouſneſſe of this table.

R. A Iuglar hath no more inuentions and peeces than are made in theſe table napkins.*

* Table napkins at a banquet or inuiting in Spain ſet out with diuers faſhions, as of beaſts, birds, &c. this the Maeſtreſala alwaies doth.

O. I ſee here a gally, there wants nothing but the gally ſlaues and the oares.

M. And here is a horſe, that I know not if the horſe of Troy were ſo wel made.

L. And here hath fallen to my lot Hercules ſhield.

R. And this which is here, what is it ?

M. It ſeemes to me to be one of the Piramides of Egypt.*

* There were many Piramides, but two of them were reckoned one of the ſeuen wonders of the world.

*O. Or it is Mauſalus * Tombe, or the tower of Babell.*

* Which for the magnificence thereof was accompted one of the wonders of the world, and was built by his wife Queene Artemiſia.

G. Now leaue off this, and ſit downe if it pleaſe you.

R. One cannot chooſe but looke vpon the ſallet made like a caſtle.

L. In faith the caſtle of Milan is no better to ſee to.

G. If we muſt ſtand to behold euery thing by it ſelfe, the time will be gone without doing any thing. Euerie one draw his chaire, for this is not a table of complements.

O. They ought not to be among friends.

G. I am the greateſt enemy in the world to ceremonies.

R. None of them ſeeme good vnto me, except it be thoſe which the Church makes.

G. Hola, diſhes. Take this Sir Lorenço.*

* They eat in little diſhes their meat, and not vpon trenchers in Spaine.

L. Make a diſh for your ſelfe, for euery one will doe the like.

R. I know not which is the better cuſtome which wee vſe in Spaine, or that which is vſed in England.

G. Que es el v'so de ynglatérra?

R. Comér priméro lo cozído, que lo assádo, nos ótros hazémos a el revés.

L. Segun réglas de med'çína primero se déven comér los manjáres que son mas duros de digestíon.

G. Y está esso en razón para que se venga a hazér la digestión en vn tiempo.

L. Pues que séa mas duro de digestión, lo asádo que lo cozído, es cosa clára.

O. Yo como soy mas golóso, hallo ótra razón.

L. Qual es?

O. Que toda cosa assáda, es mas sabrósa que la cozída, y ássi, yo lo querría a el princípio por que sobre buen cimiénto buen edifício se háze.

Me. Pues yo aunque cállo, piédras apáño.

R. Anda v. m. discréto, que obéja que bála bocado piérde.

G. A mi me paréçe que ándan ya en seco éstos molínos.

L. De la boca me lo quitó v. m.

G. Pues si yo lo quité, jústo es que yo lo pónga. Ola, dad nos de bevér, cada vno pida lo que mas gusto le diére, que de todo ay.

R. Páje yo soy muy devóto de a quel santo que partió la ca[illegible] el pobre.

P. A buen entendedór poca[illegible] de lo de sant Mar[illegible] v. m.

R. O como éres discréto, Dios me de siempre contienda, con quien me entiénda.

L. Pues yo vn tiempo fui toréro, y me holgáva siempre con * toros bravos.

G. Señores y brindo a quien tossiére.

O. ✻ Vala me Dios y que res friádos que estámos todos, no se tósse mas en vn sermón de quarésma.

R. Essa gráçia, dízen que tenémos los Españóles que sómos como mónas

G. What is the manner of England?

R. To eat their sodde meat first before their roast, wee doe quite contrary.

L. According to the rules of Phisicke, men ought first to eat those meats which are most hard of digestion.

G. And that stands with reason, because digestion may be made together.

L. Then that roast meat is more hard of digestion then the sod, it is a thing out of doubt.

O. I that am a great eater, finde another reason.

L. What is it?

O. That euery thing roasted is more sweet to the taste than the sod, and so therefore would I haue it at the first, for vpon a good foundation, a good building is made.

*M. * Although I hold my peace, I gather vp stones.*

R. You say very right, for that sheepe that bleateth looseth a bit.

G. Me thinkes these mills goe now dry.

L. You tooke it out of my mouth.

G. If I took it out, it is reason I should put it in. Hola giue vs drinke, euery one aske for that which hee likes best, for there is of euery sort.

*R. Page, I haue great deuotion to that *Saint which departed with a peece of his cloake to a poore man.*

P. To a good vnderstander a word is enough, you would haue that of Saint Martin.

R. O how you are in the right, God send me to dispute alway with him that vnderstandeth what I say.

*L. I was once a courser of Buls, and I alwaies tooke pleasure in fierce * Buls.*

G. Gentlemen, I drinke to him that shall cough.

O. God blesse me, and what colds we haue all taken, there is not more coughing in a Lenten sermon.

R. This fashion (they say) that we Spanyards haue, that we are as apes, which

** He that is silent gathereth reasons to confute his aduersarie.*

** Saint Martin gaue a peece of his cloake to a poore man, and wine of Saint Martin the most dainty of all Spaine.*

** He alludes to wine of Toro, wines called vino de Toro, which is a Bull, as also a townes name.*

mónas amígos de hazér lo que vémos hazér a otros.

L. ✻ Anſi dize vn refrán, ſi no hago lo que véo, todo me méo.

G. Cada vno alga de ſu perdíz, y la aderéçe como mejór le pareçiére, ay aſtán limónes, limas, naránjas, pimiénta, y todo lo demás.

R. ✻ La perdiz, dízen los médicos, que ſe a de comér entre tres compañéros paraque no haga mál.

L. Tiénen razón, que han de ſer el hombre, vn gato, y vn pérro.

O. Vuéſtras mercédes no han notado la variédad de aſſádos que aqui nos han traído.

R. Que eſtá debaxo de aquella enramáda?

G. Vna cabéça de javalí.

R. Eſtónces rámos de tavérna ſon aquellos.

L. Antes a el contrário que el ramo en la tabérna llama a los borrachos a el vino, y aquellos lláman a el miſmo vino, aſi como la piédra ymán el azéro.

O. A Señór Mendóza partí de eſſe Xigóte con vueſtros amígos.

M. ✻ Señór el mio murió ſúpito.

R. Paréçe que havéis reſpondído, un gran A deféſio. i. diſparate.

O. Pues aunque lo paréçe, no lo es, que a ſu provecho ha habládo el ſeñór Mendóza.

R. Pues, ſi no nos lo declara, no ſaldrémos de dúbda.

M. Señór, es el caſo, que dos compañéros llegáron a una vénta y como no uviéſſe otra coſa que çenár, que una gallína aſſáda, el uno de ellos que tenía buena hambre, y éra hombre aſtúto, díxo a el otro compañero, entanto que yo apáro éſta gallina, contáme de que murió vueſtro padre: el otro ſe cemençó a enternecér, y con lágrimas le relató un proçéſo bien largo de la enfermedád de ſu padre, y como avía muerto, en lo qual tardó

which do that which they ſee others to doe.

L. So ſaith the prouerbe, If I doe not what I ſee, I all to bepiſſe me.

G. Euery one faſten on his Partridge, and order him as beſt ſhall ſeeme good vnto him, there are Limons and Orenges, Pepper, and all things elſe.

R. A Partridge, as Phiſitions ſay, is to be eaten betweene three companions, that he may doe no harme.

L. They ſay true, that is, betweene a man, a cat, and a dog.

O. You haue not marked the varietie of the roaſt, which heere they haue brought vs.

R. What is vnder thoſe greene boughes?

G. The head of a wilde Boare.

R. Then it is the buſh of a Tauerne.

L. Rather the contrary, for the Tauerne buſh inuites thoſe that loue drinke to the wine, and theſe boughes inuites or drawes vnto it Wine it ſelfe, euen as the loadſtone draweth to it ſteele.

O. A maſter Mendoza part this roaſt leg of mutton with your friends.

M. Sir, mine dyed ſuddenly.

R. It ſeemes you haue anſwered with a ſpeech quite beſide the purpoſe.

O. Although it ſeeme, it is not ſo, for maſter Mendoza hath ſpoken it for his aduantage.

R. But if he doe not expound it, we ſhall not know what it meanes.

M. Sir, this it is, that two companions came to an Inne vpon the high way, and as there was nothing elſe to ſuppe withall, but one hen roaſted: one of them which was well hungry and acraftie fellow, ſaid to the other companion, in the meane while that I breake vp and order this hen, recount vnto me whereof your father died. The other began to be tender harted, and with teares related vnto him a long proceſſe of the ſickues of his father, & how he died, wherin he ſtood ſo long, that when he re-

tardó tanto, que quando acordó ya el otro ſe avía comído, caſi toda la gallina, el hallándo ſe burládo, quiſo eſquitárſe y díxo le compañéro, pues yo os he contádo la muerte de mi padre, contáme vos, la, de el vueſtro, el compañero, por no perdér La parte que le quedáva y concluír preſto razónes, reſpondió, Señor, el mió murió ſupito: con la qual Repuéſta el otro quedó muy burládo y el le auydó a deſpachár lo que faltáva.

membred himſelfe, the other had alreadie eaten almoſt all the hen, he finding himſelfe mocked, would quit himſelfe, and ſaid vnto him, companion, ſeeing I haue told you the death of my father, doe you tell me now the death of your father: his companion for that hee would not looſe that part which remained, and becauſe he would be ſhort anſwered, Sir, my father died ſuddenly: with which anſwer he gaue his fellow a ſcoffe, and himſelfe time to diſpatch the reſt.

R. Pues aquí no corre eſe riéſgo.

R. But here is not the like danger.

M. No, peró yo ſoy como el cuclíllo que no canto bien haſta que tengo el eſtómago lléno.

M. Although not, I am like the cuckow, which ſing not vntill I haue my ſtomacke full.

L. Con liçençia de el Señór Guzman quiéro ymbiár eſta pella de manjár blanco a un amigo.

L. With leaue of Maſter Guzman, *I will ſend this round ball of* * Manjár blanco *to a friend.*

* *A meat made of breaſts of hens, milke, ſugar, rice beaten, and ſpices mixed withall, one of the dainti-eſt meats vſed.*

G. Con mi liçénçia no yrá ſola ſi no la acompáña v. m. con aquel pávo, o eſte faiſán o el francolín.

G. With my leaue it ſhall not goe alone, but that you accompanie with it, this peacocke, this feaſant, or this francolin bird.

R. Por vida de don Lorénço es amigo o amiga?

R. I pray you hartily Sir Lorenço, *is it a he friend or ſhe friend?*

L. ✲ Quereís que confieſſe ſin turmén-to.

L. Will you that I confeſſe without the racke?

G. ✲ Y quando os le den antes mártir que confeſſór.

G. And when they doe racke you, rather proue a Martyr then a Confeſſor.

O. ✲ O que reverénda que viéne nuéſtra madre la olla.

O. O what a reuerend perſon comes here, our mother the meat.

R. Y bien adornáda de todas ſus pertenénçias.

R. And well adorned with all her appurtenances.

M. Yo deſéo ſavér, donde o porque le llamaron olla podrída?

M. I deſire to know, from whence or why they called it * Olla podrida.

* *A rotten or putrified pot. Alſo a hotchpotch of many meats together.*

L. Metaforicaménte, porque aſsí como en vn muladár ſe púdren muchas cóſas diferéntes, y de todas ſe haze la baſúra aſsí la olla que es conpuéſta de muchas coſas ſe viéne a hazér vn guizádo o potáje.

L. Metaphorically, becauſe euen as in a dung hill many different things rot together, and of all theſe they make dung for the field: euen ſo the pot which is compounded of many things is made one ielly or potage.

M. Tan buena metáfora fue eſſa como el que llamó Rey a el que guarda los puercos.

M. This was as good a Metaphor as that of him, which called the King the keeper of hogs.

O. Por mi paſſatiempo yo me quiero ponér acontár de quantas coſas eſtá compuéſta ſu mercéd de nueſtra olla, carnero, váca, toçíno.

O. For my recreation I will ſet my ſelfe to reckon, of how many things this worſhipfull the pot, is compounded, firſt mutton, beefe, and bacon.

d L. ✲ Eſſas

L. Theſe

d.L ✻ Eſſas ſon las tres poténcias de la olla como las de la alma, memória, entendimiento, voluntád.

L. *Theſe are the three powers of the pot, as the three powers of the ſoule, memorie, vnderſtanding, will.*

O. Luego ſe ſigue repóllo, návos, çevollas, ajos.

O. Now follow Cabbage, Turneps, Onions, Garlike.

d.L. ✻ Eſſas ſon las quatro virtúdes cardináles.

L. Theſe be the foure Cardinall vertues.

O. Cavéças, y pies de áves, culantro verde, alcarabéa, comínos, todas eſpécias, las de mas yérvas, y no las conóſco, otro las quénte.

O. The heads and feet of Birds, the herb Carobes or S. Iohns herb, Comines, all ſorts of ſpices, the moſt part of herbs, I know them not, let another ſpeake of them.

d.R. Lo que yo contaré deſpues, ſerá lo bien que me ha ſabído.

R. That which I will ſay of it ſhall be the good I haue taſted in it.

d.L. De el marques chapín vitélo Ytaliáno, que fue uno de los mas valiéntes ſoldados que ha tenido aquella nación, ſe quenta que quando fue a Eſpáña le diéron tanto guſto eſtas ollas, que nunca querría comér en ſu caſa, ſi no que yendo por la calle olía en caſa de algun labradór rico, adonde ſe comía alguna olla de éſtas, y ſe entráva allá y ſe aſentáua a comér con el.

L. Of Marques Chapin Vitelo, an Italian, which was one of the moſt valiant Souldiers, which that Nation hath had, it is ſaid, that when he went to Spaine, theſe hodgpots liked his taſte ſo well, that he neuer would dine in his owne houſe, but that going in the ſtreet, where he ſmelt in the houſe of any rich Farmer, where any of theſe hodgpots were eaten, there hee entred, and ſate downe to dinner with him.

d.R. Devía lo de hazér por comér a coſta agéna.

R. Belike hee did that to dine at another mans charges.

L. No, que antes que ſaliéſſe mandáva a ſu mayordómo pagáſſe toda la coſta de la olla.

L. No, for before he went out of doores he commanded his Steward to pay all the coſt of the hodgepot.

M. Pare, mira como pónes eſſe plato no deribes el ſaléro.

M. Stay, looke how thou putteſt this platter, doe not throw downe the Salt-ſeller.

L. Si, ſi, guarda, que es el aguéro de los mendózas.

L. Yea, yea, take heed, for it is the Mendozas malum omen.

R. Ya todos ſomos Mendózas en eſſo.

R. We are all Mendozas in this.

L. Eſſa raſtra nos quedó de la gentilidád.

L. This trace doth remaine to vs from the Gentiles.

M. Hemos viſto eſperiéncias muy verdadéras.

M. Wee haue ſeene many true examples hereof.

O. ✻ Créo en Dios y no en putas viéjas.

O. I beleeue in God, and not in old Wiues tales.

M. Eſſas ſon de las que yo me procúro ſiempre guardár.

M. Thoſe are they from which I alwaies ſeeke to keepe my ſelfe.

R. O ſeñor Guzman para que es eſto que ſe trae agora?

R. O maſter Guzman, wherefore is this that they bring now?

G. Dízen que para comér.

G. They ſay for to eat.

R. Si, peró éra meneſtér hazér nuévos eſtómagos, en que e chállo.

R. Yea, but it were need to make ſtomacks to receiue it.

O. Mandár los hazér de barro a trueco de

O. Cauſe them to bee made of Clay, for a ſmall

de poco dinéro.

M. Eſtas tortas reáles, ſon como cuerpo que no ocúpa lugár.

L. Yo tengo de provár eſta pepitória.

R. Yo conel * manjár reál me acomódo.

G. No ay quien pruéve eſótros guiſádos, éſtos torreſnos lampreádos, aquel adobado, el carnéro verde, las albóndigas, ni lo de mas.

T. ✲ Todo éſſo es como Pedro por de mas.

O. O como alla voy no hago mengua.

G. Alçalo pues muchacho deſembaráça y trae aquella fruta de ſartén.

P. Aqui eſtá ſeñor, y la melója y tódo.

R. Eſſo allá a los aguados, que la borracha no quiere pálla.

G. Traé pues la fruta de poſtré, camuéças, péras, azeitúnas, nuézes, avellánas, y la cája de mermeláda.

L. Haſta quando hemos de comér?

R. ✲ Haſta enfermár, como dize el refrán.

L. Y deſpues ayunár haſta ſanár.

O. Levánta eſta méſa paje, que es ya gula tanto comér.

M. ✲ Yo he perdido la gana, como ſi me la quitáran con la mano.

L. El mejór remédio, que halláron los filóſofos, contra la hambre, fue eſte.

R. ✲ Eſa filoſofía algo es gruéſſa de hiláça.

O. Mejór ſe podrá dezír verdád apuráda que ya ſaveís lo que es.

L. ✲ Ya ſe que verdádes apurádas ſon necedádes.

O. Mas pulído lo quería yo dezír.

R. Como?

O. Yndiſcreçiónes.

L. Tanto monta cortár, como deſatar,

** Made of the heads, liuers, hearts, breaſts, feet, of duckes, geeſe, or other birds, &c.*

** Of paſte of Almonds and ſugar, egges, breaſts of hens, milke, cynamon, and diuers ſorts of ſpices very like* Manjar blanco.

** Wine ſodden to the third part for a ſauce for the fritters.*

** But ſalt meats to make them drinke.*

ſmall price of money.

M. Theſe riall tarts are as the bodie which filleth no place.

*L. I will proue this * Pépitório or gallimaufry.*

R. I doe apply my ſelfe to this riall diſh of meat.

G. Is there no body to proue theſe other meates, theſe hogs liuers with the hogs caule fried with the fat, that hodgepot of mutton, mutton ſtuffed with parſly, the chopped meat made into round bals, neither the reſt.

L. All this is as Peter too much.

O. Oh as I goe there I neuer faile.

G. Take off boy, rid the table, and bring theſe fritters.

*P. Here it is Sir, and the * Melója and all.*

*R. That there is for thoſe that drinke water, for one that loues wine loues not to eat * Raiſins.*

G. Bring fruit for the laſt ſeruice, pippins, peares, olines, wallnuts, ſmall nuts, and the box of Marmalade.

L. Till when ſhall we eat?

R. Vntill we be ſicke, as ſaith the prouerb.

L. And afterward to faſt till we bee in health.

O. Take away this table, Page, for it is gluttony to eat ſo much.

M. I haue loſt my ſtomack, as though they had taken it from me with ones hand.

L. The beſt remedie that euer Philoſophers found againſt hunger, was this.

R. This Philoſophy is ſomewhat of a groſſe threed.

O. Better may you ſay a refined truth, you know what I meane.

L. I know that refined truths are fooleries.

O. I would giue it a better terme.

R. How?

O. Indiſcretions.

L. It comes all to one, to cut it off or vntie it,

tár, como díxo Alexandre.

d. R. Ola paje, tráe unos náipes entretengámos el tiempo.

M. Eſſo me contenta, vengan que deſſéo eſquitár me de un eſcudo que perdí eſtótro día.

d. L. ✲ No me péſa ami de que mi híjo juégue, ſino de que ſe quiere eſquitár.

M. El tahúr, chica ocaſión ha meneſtér para bolvér a el juégo.

d. L. A mi me pareçe que ſola una.

M. Qual es ?

d. L. Tenér dinéros.

M. Ni al tahúr faltó que jugár, ni al golóſo que comér, ni al enduradór que endurár, ni al borácho que bevér.

d. R. Aqui eſtán los náipes, que jugarémos ?

d. L. Iuguémos gana piérde.

M. Es juego de mucha fléma.

d. L. Pues ſéa a el triúnfo.

M. Quede para los viéjos.

d. L. A los çiéntos.

M. Deſvanéçe ſe me la cabéça, de eſtár ſiempre contándo.

d. L. Menos os agradará el chilindrón.

M. E'ſſe para las mugéres de tras de los tiçónes.

d. L. No es, ſi no que vos no queréis juego de virtúd, ſi no de arrebáta cápas.

M. Para que hemos de eſtár gaſtándo ✲ tiempo, ſino lo que ſe a de empeñár, venda ſe, como dízen.

d. R. Si, por que haziénda hécha, no da prieſſa.

d. L. ✲ Y mas quando le gánan a el hombre ſu dinero, le quitan preſto de cuidádo.

M. He aqui eſtán los naipes juguémos treínta por fuérça, o los albúres que todos éſtos ſon buenos juegos.

d. R. Yo no ſoy amigo de ellos, ſi no de juegos de primór, como el Reynádo, el tres dos y as, triunfo calládo y ótros ſemejantes.

O. Ora

it, as Alexander ſaid.

R. Hola Page, bring Cards, let vs paſſe away the time.

M. That pleaſeth me well, let them come, for I deſire to quit my ſelfe of a crowne, that I loſt this other day.

L. It greenes me not that my ſonne is a gameſter, but that hee will goe to quit himſelfe.

M. The gameſter requireth but ſmall occaſion to returne to play.

L. It ſeemes to me but one onely.

M. What is it ?

L. That he haue money to doe it.

M. Neither hath the gameſter euer wanted money to play, nor the glutton to eat, nor the patient to ſuffer, nor the louer of drinke to drinke.

R. Here are the cards, what ſhall we play at ?

L. Let vs play at Loadam.

M. It is a play of much patience.

L. Then let it be at Trump.

M. Let that be for old men.

L. At mount ſant.

M. It makes my head to be in a ſwoune, to be alwaies counting.

L. Deſſe will the play of Chilindron like you.

M. That is for women by the fire ſide.

L. It is not, but that you will not haue any game of vertue but ſweepe ſtake play.

M. Wherefore ſhould we waſte time, but that which we muſt pawne, let vs ſell out right as they ſay.

R. Yea, but ones ſubſtance made vp, let there be no haſte to loſe ones money.

L. And moreouer, when they win a mans money from him, they ſtraightway take him out of care.

M. Behold here are the cards, let vs play at thirtie perforce or Albures, for theſe are good plaies.

R. I loue not theſe, but games of chiefeſt price, as the Reynádo, *the three, two and ace, ſtill trump, and other the like.*

O. Now

O. Ora por quitár todos de contiénda yo quiéro dar vn médio y ſea eſte la priméra.

O. Now to take away all occaſion of ſtrife, I will giue a meane, and let it be Primera.

M. Muy bien avéis dicho que es médio entre los eſtrémos.

M. You haue ſaid very well, for it is a meane betweene extremes.

d. L. Yo entiéndo que ſe llamó priméra, porque tiene el priméro lugár entre los juegos de náypes.

L. I take it that it is called Primera, *becauſe it hath the firſt place at the play at cards.*

d. R. Alto, que ha de ſer el tanto?

R. Let vs go, what is the ſumme that we play for?

M. Quatro reáles y dies y ſeis de ſaca.

M. Two ſhillings ſtake, and eight ſhillings reſt.

d. L. Pues barajá eſſos naipes bien.

L. Then ſhuffle the cards well.

O. Yo álço por mano, figura úvo de ſér, no querría yo yr hecho figura ſin blanca.

O. I lift to ſee who ſhall deale, it muſt be a coat card, I would not bee a coat with neuer a blanke in my purſe.

d. R. Yo un ás alcé.

R. I did lift an Ace.

d. L. Yo un quátro.

L. I a foure.

M. Yo un ſeis, con que ſoy mano.

M. I a ſix, whereby I am the eldeſt hand.

O. Véngan las cartas que yo las doy una, dos, tres, quatro. Vna, dos, tres, quatro.

O. Let the cards come to me, for I deale them; one, two, three, foure: one, two, three, foure.

M. Paſo.

M. Paſſe.

d. R. Paſo.

R. Paſſe.

d. L. Paſo.

L. Paſſe.

O. Enbído un tanto.

O. I ſet ſo much.

M. No le quiero.

M. I will none.

d. R. No le quiero.

R. Ile none.

d. L. Yo por fuérça avré de querér, echád cartas.

L. I muſt of force ſee it, deale the cards.

M. Echad me quatro cartas he aqui mi tanto.

M. Giue me foure cards, Ile ſee as much as he ſets.

d. R. He aqui el mio, cada uno meta el ſuyo.

R. See here my reſt, let euery one be in.

M. Buelvo a paſár.

M. I am come to paſſe againe.

d. R. Yo tanbien.

R. And I too.

d. L. Yo hago lo própio.

L. I doe the ſelfe-ſame.

O. Yo enbído mi reſto.

O. I ſet my reſt.

M. Quiero le.

M. Ile ſee it.

d. R. Yo tanbien.

R. I alſo.

d. L. Pues yo no me puedo echár.

L. I cannot giue it ouer.

M. Yo hize una primerilla.

M. I was a ſmall prime.

d. L. Yo voy a flux.

L. I am flush.

M. No querría yo que le hiziéſſedes.

M. I would you were not.

d. L. Es éſſa buena promixidád?

L. Is this good neighbourhood?

M. ✲ La caridád bien ordenáda comiénça de ſi míſmo.

M. Charitie well placed, doth firſt beginne with ones ſelfe.

O. Yo he hecho cinquénta y çinco con que máto ſu priméra.

O. I made fine and fiftie, with which I win his prime.

d. L. Yo flux con que tíro.

L. I flush whereby I draw.

d. R. No juégo mas a éſte juégo.

R. I play no more at this play.

M. Ni yo a otro ninguno que voy a vn negócio

M. Neither I at any other, for I muſt goe about

negócio que me ympórta.

d. L. Pajes toma cada quatro reáles de baráto.

Pa. Centuplum acipias.

Pa. En el çielo lo halle v.m. colgádo de vn garavato.

about a buſineſſe that concernes me.

L. Pages take euery one two ſhillings a peece of the winnings.

P. I pray God you may receiue it a hundred fold.

P. In heauen I pray God you may finde it hanged on a hooke.

Diálogo quarto, entre dos amígos, llamádos *el uno Mora, el otro Aguilár*, y un moço de mulas y una Ventéra: trátan *ſe en el de las cóſas tocántes a el camíno con muy gracióſos dichos y chiſtes.*

The fourth Dialogue, betweene two friends, the one called Mora, the other *Aguilar, and a mulettier and a woman Innekeeper:* Herein are handled things pertaining to the way with very pleaſant ſayings, and gracious ſpeeches.

M. OLa Pedro havéis traído mi mula?

P. Señór ſi, aquí eſtá la mohína.

M. Mohina es nunca buéna.

P. Por que, Señor?

M. ✻ Por que ni mula mohína, ni moça marína, ni moço Pedro en cáſa, ni Abád por Vezíno, ni poyo a la puerta, no es bueno.

P. Yo le prométo a v. m. que es mejór éſta, que la que araſtró a el cura quando dezia Dominus providebit.

M. Es vieja?

P. Nunca la vi naçér, mas yo créo que mas viéja éra ſu madre.

M. Tira cozes?

P. Nunca una ſola.

M. Siempre ſon a pares, camína bién?

P. Todo lo que ánda ſe dexa atrás.

M. Tan buenas grácias tiéne a fee que me va enamorándo.

P. Vna tiene ſobre todas que es grande Oſtróloga.

M. Como anſi?

P. Conoçe mejór que vn relóx quando es médio dia, y luego pide çebáda, y ſi no ſe la dan dize lunes

M. HOe Peter, haue you brought my Mule?

*P. Yea Sir, here is the * Mohina.*

M. Mohina is neuer good.

P. Why Sir?

*M. Becauſe neither a mule with a blacke muſſell, nor a maid that hath paſſed the Sea, nor a ſeruant * Peter in ones houſe, nor a neighbour Abbot, nor a Well at the doore, is euer good.*

*P. I promiſe your Worſhip that ſhe is better than that which dragged along * the Curate when he ſaid, Dominus prouidebit.*

M. Is ſhe old?

P. I ſaw her not foaled, but I beleeue that hir dame was elder.

M. Doth ſhe kicke?

P. She neuer giues one alone.

M. They are alwaies by couples, doth ſhee trauell well?

P. She neuer trauels but ſhee leaues the way behinde her.

M. She hath ſo good tricks in faith, that I am in loue with her.

P. One ſhe hath aboue all, for ſhe is a great Aſtronomer.

M. How ſo?

P. Shee knowes better than a clocke when it is noone, and foorthwith ſhee lookes for prouender, and if they giue

* Mohína, *ſignifieth anger, paſſion, diſquietneſſe, churliſhneſſe. Alſo a ſhee mule with a black face or muſſell, alwaies hauing iadiſh trikes.*

* *i. A knauiſh ſeruant.*

* *A Curate falling off his mule hanging in the ſtirrop, was dragged ſo a long, till a labourer in the fielde tooke him out.*

lunes y no ay paſſár de allí.

gine her none, then ſhee ſaies Lunes, *and ſtirres not a foot from the place.*

* Lunes, *meaning beere the grunting voice of a mule or horſe, but* Lunes *properly ſignifieth Monday.*

M. Buen remédio para eſſo rogár ſe lo con la eſpuéla.

M. A good remedy for this to intreat her with the ſpurre.

P. Es flaquíſſima de memória.

P. She is moſt weake of memorie.

M. Como?

M. How?

P. Aunque le hínguen vn palmo de eſpuéla a dos paſſos que da, ſe le ha ya oluidádo.

P. Although you ſtrike into her a hands breadth of the ſpurre, within two ſteps after ſhe hath forgotten it.

M. ✻ Traélda, no ſe me da náda, que topado ha Sancho con ſu Roçíno y ſi ella es traydora yo ſoy alebóſo, y nos entenderémos a coplas.

M. Bring her, I care not, for Sancho hath met with his Palfrey, and if ſhe be a knauiſh iade, I am as knauiſh a rider, and we ſhall vnderſtand one another by couples.*

* A ſcabbed horſe fit for a ſcald Squire.

P. ✻ En yendo v. m. con cuydádo hará de ella céra y Pávilo que ella con quien ſe deſcuyda úſa ſus tretas.

P. You trauelling with her, with good heed, you may agree like the wax and the weeke, but ſhee with one that is not aware of hir, will play hir part like a Fencer.*

* The wax of the candle, and the weeke of the candle, i. all in all.

M. Echalde la ſilla, apretálde bien la síncha ponélde gurupéra atahárre y pretál, acorta eſſos eſtribos que yo me averné con ella.

M. Set on the ſaddle, gird hir hard with the girts, put on the crooper and poitrell, make ſhorter theſe ſtirrups, for I will make agreement with hir.

P. Quiero ponér, vnas aciónes nuévas por mas ſeguridád.

P. I will put on new ſtirrup leathers for more ſecuritie.

M. Echálde el freno, ponéd le bien el bocádo y acortád la cabeçáda mirád ſi eſtá bien herráda de todos quatro pies.

M. Put on the bridle, make the bit faſt, make ſhorter the head-ſtall, looke if ſhe be well ſhod of all foure feet.

* Manos, *i. the forefeet.*

P. * En las mános, buenas herradúras y clávos tiene, de los pies de ſuyo gaſta.

P. On the forefeet, ſhe hath good ſhooes and nailes, on the hinder feet ſhe weares out hir owne hoofe.*

* *With kicking.*

M. Echáldo el coxín y porta mantéo.

M. Put the cuſhion on the ſaddle, and the portmanteau.

A. Ea compañero hémos ya de acabár de ſalír oy de aqui?

A. How now companion, ſhall we make an end that we may get hence to day?

M. Yo vos venís cavalgando?

M. What are you come already, and a horſe-backe?

A. ✻ Vos tardáis mas en componér os que vna nóbia.

A. You tarry longer in ſetting your ſelfe in order then a bride.

M. Vueſtra mula es manſa?

M. Is your mule gentle?

A. Coma vna borrega no lo veis que ſufre maléta.

A. As gentle as a lambe, doe you not ſee he beares a maile.

M. ✻ De el água mánza me libre dios, que de la braba yo me guardaré.

M. From the ſtill water God keep me, from the raging, I will keepe my ſelfe.

A. A la vueſtra, baſta le ſer mohína.

A. For your mule, it is ſufficient, that ſhe is a mule with a blacke muzzle.

M. Mal conocéys vos aquien nunca viſtes, pues a fee que eſtá granduáda por zalamánca.

M. You hardly know him whom you neuer ſaw, but in faith this mule hath taken degree in Zalamanca.

A. En

A. In

A. En que facultád?

M. En la de la vellaqueriá, bachilléra en ártes de tirár cózes, licenciáda en léyes de véntas y de metónes, y doctóra es en astrología y matemáticas.

A. Por ello está siempre mirando a el çielo.

M. Es por contemplár los ástros y planétas y signos y sus cúrsus.

A. Vámos de aquí que tenémos larga la jornada.

M. Quantas leguas pensáys caminár oy?

A. Yo querría que doze.

M. Pues ala mano de dios Pedro ten esse estríbo.

A. Pedro os Llamáys compañéro?

P. A servício de v.m.

A. Pues no le hága Dios mas mal a Pedro de el que se le alcánça.

P. No ay porque Dios de salúd a su merçéd.

A. Sé que las pullas no se han de echár a los amígos.

M. ✻ De amígo a amígo chínche en el ójo.

A. Yo no quiero pléito con vos Pédro que sabéis mucho.

P. Mas * Sábe vn torézno.

A. Moço de mulas vn punto sáve mas que el diáblo.

M. Pues que pensáis vos que le falta a Pedro para diablo?

P. No mas que vn año de aprendíz y vn garaváto.

A. Para que el garaváto?

P. Para sacár a vuestras merçédes de la caldéra quando allá váyan.

M. Nosotros no hémos de ýr a el ynfiérno.

P. No se yrán mas lleváros hán.

M. Aredro váyas malo, ergo maledicte diabole.

A. Pedro amigo, de que se haze la puta viéja?

P. De la puta móça.

M. No se haze sino de seldo y eneldo, y de el cagaxón mordéldo, y de el polvo de las * éras.

A. De

A. In what art?

M. In the art of villanie, Bachelor of the kicking art, Licentiat of lawes in Innes, and Doctor in Astrologie, and the Mathematicks.

A. For this cause, shee lookes alwaies towards heauen.

M. It is to contemplate the Starres, Planets, and Signes, and their courses.

A. Let vs goe, for we haue a long iourney.

M. How many leagues doe you thinke to trauell to day?

A. I would willingly goe twelue.

M. Then in the name of God, Peter hold this stirrup.

A. Friend are you called Peter?

M. At your seruice Sir.

A. Then God doe no more mischiefe to Peter, then that he knowes himselfe how to practise.

P. There is no cause why God giue you health Sir.

A. I know that men ought not to flout their friends.

*M. One friend to another friend, a * Cinche in the eie.*

A. I will not goe to law with you Peter, for that you know so much.

P. A rasher of Bacon sauers more.

A. A mulitter knowes one point more then the deuill.

M. Why what thinke you, what wants Peter to become a deuill?

P. No more but a yeares apprentiship, and a flesh-hooke.

A. Why a flesh-hooke?

P. To pull out your Worships out of the caulderne when you goe thither.

M. We are not to goe to hell.

P. You are not to go, but they are to carrie you thither.

M. Come behinde me therefore euill spirit, Maledicte Diabole.

A. Friend Peter, what is an old whore made of?

P. Of a young whore.

M. It is not made but of thy selfe and the herbe Dill, and of shitting eat thy fill, and of the dust of Barne floore, or of the dust of which thou art thy selfe.

* Chinche, *a little round creature with many feet, in hot Countries, breeding in beds, bites worse then a louse, and stinketh filthily.*

* Saber, *i. To know. Also to sauour wel in taste, as meat, drinke.*

* éras, *hath two significations, one for the flooze where they threash their corne, and also thou art.*

A. De cara me le véo y tiéne alpargátes, y va a pié.

* *Shooes of packthred made for Footmen or Lackeies to trauell a foot.*

M. Pedro mira que te dize no reſpóndes?

P. ✻ No óygo que ſoy ſordo de vna muéla.

M. ✻ Pues a el maeſtro Cuchilláda?

P. No me laſtíma mucho eſta Herída que es dáda vñas arríba, peró guarde ſe de el rebés que yo tiraré vñas abájo.

A. Pedro yo entiendo que ſoys vos aquel que Llamávan de vrde malas.

P. Pues todo el mundo ojo alerta que alguna téngo de vrdír en éſte camíno.

A. Pedro alli viéne vn, caminánte échale vna pulla.

P. Ola hermano por donde van?

C. A do?

P. En caſa de la puta que os parió.

A. Buena a fee otra a el compañéro que quéda atrás.

P. A ſeñór es ſuyo el mulo?

C. Qual mulo?

P. Aquel que beſéis en el cúlo.

A. Eſte cavalléro que viene muy brábo no baya ſin la ſuya.

P. A ſenor v.m. a caſo va a londres?

C. Si voy porque lo dezís.

P. Pues cagaxón para quien va a Londres.

M. Que bonito es Pedro ſi ſe lavaſſe.

P. Antes deſpues de lavado no valgo nada.

A. Quanto avrémos andádo Pedro?

P. ✻ Nunca buelvo a mirár atrás, por no ſer como la mugér de Lot.

A. Quanto nos falta de aqui a el primer Puéblo?

P. Legua y miérda.

M. La legua andarémos noſotros, eſotra vos la paſaréis.

A. Pues por que ſe paſſe ſin ſentír quenta vn quento Pedro.

P. Dedinéros para mi le contára yo de buena gana.

A. No

*A. I ſee him iuſt ouer againſt me, and he hath * ſhooes of packthred, and he goes a foot.*

M. Peter, harke what he ſaith vnto thee, doeſt thou not anſwer?

P. I heare not, for I am deafe of one of my chocke teeth.

M. What hath the maſter of Fence a blow or venie?

P. This wound hurts me not much, for it is giuen with the hand vpward, but beware of the ſwaſh blow, for I will draw it with the hand downwards.

A. Peter I vnderſtand that you are hee which they called a plotter of knaueries.

P. Euerie one looke to himſelfe, for I muſt plot ſomething this iourney.

A. Peter there commeth a traueller, beſtow a quip on him.

P. Hola brother, which way goe they?

T. Whither?

P. To the houſe of the queane thy mother.

A. Good in faith, another to his companion, which remaines behind.

P. Hoe Sir, is the Mule yours?

T. What Mule?

P. That whoſe arſe kiſſe you.

A. This Gentleman which goeth ſo bodily, let him not paſſe without his flout.

P. Hoe Sir, goes your Worſhip to London?

T. Tea, I goe for that you ſay it.

P. Then a turd for him that goeth to London.

M. Oh how proper a man were Peter, if he were waſhed and painted.

P. Nay after I am waſhed I am worth nothing.

A. How farre haue we iourneyed Peter?

P. I neuer turne to looke backe, becauſe I would not be as Lots wife.

A. How farre haue we from hence to the next towne?

P. A league and a turd.

M. The league we will goe, the other thou ſhalt paſſe.

A. That we may paſſe ouer this iourney without wearineſſe, tell vs a tale Peter.

P. For my part, I would tell money with a better will.

A. Not

A. No, ſi no algun acaeçído que te avíno por eſſos camínos.

P. Eſtonces contár les hé vno que me ſubçedío el viáje paſſádo haziendo eſte camíno con vn hidálgo.

M. No ſea muy largo que me dormiré.

P. Si ſe durmiére la mohína tendrá cuydádo de deſpertár le.

M. Vos le havéis levantádo mil falſos teſtimónios, mira quan bien camína y quan manſa va?

P. ✻ A el freír lo verá.

A. Ea dexémos eſſo vaya el quento.

P. Pocos dias ha, yo víne eſte camíno con vno de los mayores habladóres que he conoçído en mi vida y como el hablár mucho, y el mentír ſon tan pariéntes, dezía las mas terríbles mentíras que ſe pueden ymaginár, pues como el me preguntáſſe vn dia que me parecía de ſu buena converſaçión, yo le reſpondí que muy bien, peró que quando contáſſe algun quento, ſe Alargaſſe y paſáſſe tanto, que dava que mormurar a quantos le oýan, el me díxo pues ſea eſta la manera quando llegueemos a las poſádas, ſienta ſe tu apar de mi, y ſi me viéres contár álgo que te parézca que voy fuera de camíno, tira me de la halda, eſtonçes yo entenderé, y me deterné, con eſte con çierto llegamos aquella noche a vna venta, donde a caſo avían llegado tambien muchos cavalléros, y como ſe aſentaſſen a çenár y mi ámo entre ellos, yo me púſe a ſu lado conforme a el conciérto, y como es coſtumbre cada vno començó a contár las maravíllas que avía viſto por el mundo, llegó la bez a el bueno de mi amo el qual dixo que avia eſtado en tierra de japón, y qué entre otras coſas maravilloſas que alli avia viſto fue vna yglézia que tenía mil pies de largo, a eſté tiémpo yo que le vídè

A. *Not ſo, but ſome chance that hath fallen out to thee on theſe waies.*

P. *Then I will tell you one which hapned vnto me the laſt voyage I came this way with a Gentleman.*

M. *Let it not be too long, for I will ſleepe.*

P. *If you ſleepe, the ſhe mule will be carefull to wake you.*

M. *You haue raiſed a thouſand falſe teſtimonies againſt her, behold how well ſhe trauelleth, and how well ſhe goeth?*

P. ** By the frying you ſhall ſee.*

A. *Well let vs leaue this, forward with the tale.*

P. *A little while ſince, I came this way with one of the greateſt babblers that I knew in my life, and as much prating and lying are nere of kinne, he told the moſt horrible lies that could be imagined, afterward as he asked me one day, what I thought of his good behauiour, I made him anſwer, that I thought well, but that when hee did tell any tale, hee paſſed the bounds ſo much, that hee gaue occaſion to as many as did heare him, to ſpeake ill of him behinde his backe: he told me, ſeeing it is ſo, when we come to our Innes, ſit thou next vnto me, and if thou ſhalt ſee me tell any thing that ſeemes vnto thee that I go out of the way, pluck me by the skirt, then will I vnderſtand and ſtay my ſelfe, with this agreement we came that night to a lodging on the high way, whither by chance alſo many Gentlemen were arriued, and as they ſate them down to ſupper, and my maſter among them, I ſet my ſelfe cloſe by his ſide, according to our agreement, and as the manner is, euery one began to tell of the maruels which hee had ſeene in the world, the turn came to the good man my maſter, who ſaid that he had beene in the Land of Iaptha, & among other marueilous things that there he had ſeene was a church, which was a thouſand foot*

* *A Collier ſold coales to a woman, and putting downe his coales put vp her frying pan, the woman asking if they were good coales, he anſwered,* A freyr lo verá, *i. by the frying ſhe ſhould ſee.*

vide yr tan desmandádo y como estava a lerra tíro le rézio de la halda, el luego me entendió, y díxo;y vno en ancho:los cavalléros se començáron a mirár vnos a otros y a son-reýr se hásta que vno dellos díxo, vala me Dios señór, y para que servía ella yglézia tan larga y angosta, de mill pies de largo? y vno en ancho,el replicó agradezcan vuestras merçedes que me tiráron de la falda atiempo, que si no, yo les boto a Dios que yo la quadrára, fue estonçes tanta la risa de todos que a mi amo le convíno aquella noche salir se de la venta, por que entre todos quedó por refrán quando alguno contáva algo que pareçía mentira ✲ Le dezia el terçero quadre la v. m. que harto largo está.

long: then I seeing him so far out of order, as I was readie prepared, pluckt him by the skirt, he presently vnderstood me, and said; and one foot in bredth: the Gentlemen began to looke one vpon another, and to smile, vntill one of them said, In the name of God Sir, and for what vse serued this Church so long and narrow, of a thousand foot in length and but one in bredth? he replied, thanke him, that pulled me by the skirt of the garment so soone, which if he had not done, I vow to God, I had made it foure square: then was there such a laughter among all, that my master was fain that night to get him out of the Inne, for that among them all, it remained as a prouerb, when any man did tell any thing which did seeme a lie, the third man said vnto him, make it square, for it is long enough.

M. De vna cosa me espanto yo Pedro.
P. Qual es?
M. Como pudíste durár tan largo tiempo con tu competidór en la facultád.
A. ✲ Si, por que esse es tu enemígo el que es de tu ofício.
P. Es verdád que muchas vezes le quí se dexár por esso, y se lo dezía que no quería mas caminár con el, por que era tocádo de mi própria enfermedád y no me dexava hazér bása.
A. Y que respondió a ésso?
P. Luego me prometía con juraménto, que callaría tóda vna jornada para que yo hablásse.
A. Y cumplía lo?
P. Tan ynposible le éra a el pódér lo ✲ cumplír cómo a v. m. dijerír esse pelo de asno, que ha comido.
M. Compañero pagado os han vuestro travájo.
A. No tenéis razon Pedro ansi yo os vea zarco a podér de núbes.
P. Antes ciegue, que mal véa.
A. ✲ Ansi yo os vea arçobíspo con mitra

*M. Of one thing I wonder Peter.
P. What is it?
M. How thou couldest endure so long time, with thy competitor in thine owne facultie?
A. Yea, for he is thy enemy which is of thy owne profession.
P. It is true, for many times I would leaue him for this cause, and did tell him, that I would not trauell no more with him, because he was infected with my disease, and did not suffer me to take vp * a tricke.
A. And what answer made he to this?
P. Forthwith he promised me with an oth, that he would hold his peace all one iourney, that I might speake.
A. And did he performe it?
P. It was as impossible for him to haue power to accomplish it, as for your Worship to digest this * Asses haire which you haue eaten.
M. Companion, you are paid home for your labour.
A. You mistake Peter, I see you dimne sighted, by reason of clouds.
P. Rather wish I you blinde, than that I see ill.
A. Nay rather that I may haue my sight to*

* As at cards.

* i. Calling him asse by craft or the gudgeons, or fooleries to day you haue swallowed.

tra de ſiéte palmas.

P. Anſi yo le véa a el, Pápa higos de ſu múla.

A. ✻ Echo te vna pulla * con ſu pullonçillo que tu mugér te haga çiérvo y te llámen tódos cuquillo.

P. ✻ Echo te vna pulla venida ſobre mar, que los dientes ſe te cáygan y no puedas meár.

M. Piquémos compañéro que ſe va haziendo tarde.

A. Que hora ſerá Pedro?

P. La de ayer a eſtas oras puntualménte.

A. Eſſo tanbien lo dixéra mi mula ſi ſupiéra hablár.

P. Soy yo Relóx, que me pregúnta que óra es?

A. ✻ A lo menos * badájo, que monta tanto.

P. Y ſi doy adonde daré?

A. En la cabeça de el puto de tu padre.

P. Mas çerca eſtá la ſuya y ſonará bien, pues eſta huéca.

M. Bien camina de andadúra vueſtra mula.

A. Y la vueſtra ha bien depórtante.

M. Si no la convirtiéſſe algunas vezes en tróte que pareçe a el de la madre.

A. Entrémos en eſta vénta a dár çevada y comér vn vocádo.

P. Vn bocádo no mas, mas piénſo yo comér de vn çiento.

M. No os ſabréis paſſár un día ſin comér Pedro?

P. ✻ Par dios nueſtro amo, como díze el vizcaíno, trípas llévan a pies que no pies a trípas.

A. ✻ Yo tambien digo que pan y víno ánden camino que no moço garrído.

P. Paz ſea en éſta caſa quien eſtá acá huéſpeda?

V. Quien eſtá alla quien lláma?

P. Ay poſáda Señora?

V. Si Señór, éntren y ſéan muy bien venídos que todo recádo ay.

*to ſee you an Archbiſhop with * a miter of ſeuen hand bredths high.*

* i. Caróça, which is a high hat of paper ſet on the head of a Bawd, riding on an Aſſe thorow the ſtreets for a puniſhment.

P. Nay not ſo, but that I might alſo ſee you eat the ſhittings of your mule.

A. I caſt thee a bone, with his yong one to gnaw vpon, thy wife makes thee a hart, and they call thee Cuckold euery one.

* Pulla, a flout.

P. I caſt the bone to gnaw vpon at ſea, thy teeth fall out, and thy water hold in.

M. Let vs ſpurre on companion, for it waxeth late.

A. What is it a clocke Peter?

P. Iuſt the ſame, as it was yeſterday at this time.

A. This could my mule tell me, if ſhe could ſpeake?

P. Am I clocke, that you aske me what it is a clocke?

A. At leaſt thou art a clapper, which is all one.

* Badájo, a clapper of a bell, by a metaphor a ioulthead.

P. And if I doe ſtrike, where ſhall I hit?

A. Vpon the head of the buggerer thy father.

P. Your head is neere vnto me, and it will ſound well ſeeing it is hollow.

M. Your mule doth go a ſwift eaſie paſe.

A. And yours ambles well.

M. If ſhe did not change it, ſometimes into a trot, which ſeemes like the trot of hir dam.

A. Let vs goe in into this Inne, to bait and eat a bit.

P. What one bit and no more, I thinke to eat more than an hundred.

M. Can you not paſſe one day Peter without eating?

* A Biskaine trauelling a foot faint for want of food, filled his belly, afterward went luſtily, and ſaid, the belly carrieth the feet, and not the feet the belly.

*P. By God our maſter, as the * Biskaine ſaith, the belly carrieth the feet, and not the feet the belly.*

*A. I alſo ſay, * that bread and wine are trauellers, and not the luſtie frolike youth.*

* The luſty youth without eating or drinking muſt needs faint, and giue him that, although he be faint he goeth forward.

P. Peace bee in this houſe, who is heere hoſteſſe?

H. Who is there, who cals?

P. Haue you lodging miſtris?

H. Yes Sir, come in, and be very well welcome, for all good entertainment is heere to be had.

P. Que

P. Que aurá que comér?
V. Ay conéjos ay perdíçes, ay pollos, ay gallinas, ay ganços, ay ánades, ay carnero, ay vaca, ay cabrito, ay menudo de puerco.
P. Bien díxe yo que en ſu caſa de v. m. no podía faltár puerco.
V. Ni en la ſuya faltará vellaco, mientras el eſtuviére dentro.
P. No en verdád ſeñora, ſi no que me dixéron que los dias paſſádos avía v. m. reñido bravaménte con la limpiéça.
V. Tambien me dixéron a mi que avía el deſterrádo la Verguença de ſu caſa.
M. Huelgo me Pedro que as topado con lo que avías meneſtér.
P. Y aun ella me ha meneſtér a mi.
V. ✻ Yo por çierto, ſi no es para poner le en peralvillo con doze y la maeſtra, no ſe para que?

* Peralvíllo, *a mount in Spaine where they ſhoot malefactors to death.*
* 1. *That arrow which hitteth on the heart.*

P. Aora Señóra no nos digámos mas calláre, y callémos que ſendas nos tenémos.
V. Ea acábe habladór de Ventája, pida lo que ha meneſtér.
P. Deme héno, y p ja, y çebáda, para las mulas.
V. Quanto quiere?
P. Dos harnéros de héno y un zelemín de çebáda.
V. Muy poco es para tres véſtias.
P. Aquí no ay mas que dos qual es la ótra?
V. La otra ſóys vos y mas tragóna que eſſótras dos.
P. Si ſoy mas, no de paxa ni çebada porque es muy dúra de digeſtión.
V. Mas duro es vn garróte y ſuele ablandár las coſtíllas a vn velláco.
M. Bien eſtá no paſſe mas adelante ſeñora Hueſpeda quanto pónen de aquí a la çiudád?
V. Señor çinco leguas.
M. Podrémos los caminár de a qui a la noche?
V. Como picáren?

M. Ay

P. *What ſhall we haue to dinner?*
H. *There are conies, there are Partridges, there are Chickens, Hens, Geeſe, Duckes, there is Mutton, there is Beefe, Kid, and Hogs inwards.*
P. *Well ſaid I, that in your houſe there could not want hogs fleſh.*
H. *Nor in your houſe ſhall there want a knaue while you are within.*
P. *No in truth Miſtres, but they told me that awhile agoe you and cleanlineſſe had beene at bate.*
H. *And they told me, that you had baniſhed ſoame faſtneſſe from your houſe.*
M. *I am glad Peter that thou haſt met with that thou hadſt need of.*
A. *And alſo ſhe hath need of me.*
H. *I haue need of him truly, if it be but to put him in * Peralvillo to ſhoot twelue arrowes at him, with the * miſtris, I know not for what elſe?*
P. *Now Miſtris, let vs ſay no more, hold your peace and let vs be ſtill, for we haue a quip a peece.*
H. *Goto, make an end babler in graine, and demand that you haue need of.*
P. *Giue me hay, and ſtraw, and prouender for the mules.*
H. *How much will you haue?*
P. *Two ſieues full of hay, and a pecke of barley.*
H. *It is very little for three beaſts.*
P. *Heere are no more than two, which is the other?*
H. *The other are you, and more deuouring than the other two.*
P. *If I be more, it is not of ſtraw nor barley, for it is very hard of digeſtion.*
H. *Harder is a cudgell, and yet it vſeth to ſoften the ribs of a knaue.*
M. *It is well, paſſe no further forward miſtreſſe hoſteſſe, how farre doe they count it from hence to the Citie?*
H. *Sir fiue leagues.*
M. *May we ride them betwixt this and night?*
H. *As you ſhall haſten.*

M. *Is*

M. Ay algun río en el camíno o algun mal paſſo?

V. Por do quiera, ay vna legua de mal camíno.

M. Ay adonde herrár?

V. El camino no ſeñór, las mulas ſi Señor, vueſtras merçédes mil partes ay donde pueden herrár.

M. ✻ Si ſon los yerros por amores, dignos ſon de perdonár.

A. Señora huéſpeda cuya es éſta venta?

V. De vn cavallero de la çiudád.

A. Quanto págan por ella de arrendamiénto en vn año?

V. Mas que ella vale, quinientos ducados.

M. De eſſa ſuerte, buena maña ſe an menéſtér dar a hurtár para ſacár la coſta.

P. Eſſa no fálta, el gáto por liebre, la carne de mula por váca, el víno paſsádo por água todo va de éſta manera.

V. ✻ Mala paſqua de Dios a el vellaco y mal ſan Iuán, quando ha viſto el, eſſo en mi venta?

P. Viſto lo no, guſtádo lo ſi.

V. Vos mentís como velláco, que nunca tal.

P. ✻ Aora eſtémos a quenta huéſpeda no demos de comér a el Diablo, venga acá no ſe acuerda el otro día quando yo vine por aquí con un cavallero, que le pidió le dieſſe un pedáço de carne de aquéllo que le avía dádo otro dia antes quando avía paſsádo por aquí, porque dezía que le avía ſavído muy bien, lo qual oyendo aquel niño chiquíto, díxo caro nos coſtaría, ſi cada dia ſe nos avía de morír un Roçín.

V. Es Verdád que aquello fue aquel Roçín que ſe nos murió, peró eſtáva tan górdo y tan líndo que éra mejór que carne de váca.

M. Señóra huéſpeda aunque mas líndo fea, no nos dee de el agóra.

V. No Señór que ya ſe acabó, haſta aora avia de durár?

M. Vea-

M. *Is there any Riuer in the way, or any euill paſſage?*

H. *Which way ſoeuer you goe, there is a league of euill way.*

M. *Is there any place* herrár?*

H. *The way, no Sir, the mules, yes Sir, a thouſand paſſages where you may erre.*

* *To miſſe or erre. Alſo to ſhoe a horſe or mule.*

M. *If they be errors for loue, they are worthy to be pardoned.*

A. *Miſtreſſe hoſteſſe, whoſe is this Inne?*

H. *A Gentlemans of the Citie.*

A. *How much doe you pay for the hire of it by the yeare?*

H. *More than it is worth, fiue hundred duckets.*

M. *By this meanes they had need good skill to ſteale to get out their charge.*

P. *That skill wants not, a cat for hare fleſh, the fleſh of a mule for beefe, wine mixed with water, all goes in this manner.*

H. *God ſend the knaue an ill Eaſter, and an ill Midſomer, when haue you ſeene this in my Inne?*

P. *I haue not ſeene, but I haue taſted it?*

H. *You lie like a knaue, there was neuer any ſuch matter.*

P. *Hoſteſſe we are vpon the reckoning now, * let vs not giue the diuell his dinner, come hither, doe you not remember the other daie, when I came this way with a Gentleman which requeſted you to giue him a peece of meat, of that you had giuen him the other day before, when he paſſed this way, becauſe he ſaid it liked his taſte very well, the which the little childe hearing, ſaid, it would be deare fleſh vnto vs, if euery day there ſhould die a nag.*

* *Let vs not brawle and fall out, and ſo goe to law vpon words, and ſo make the deuill dine.*

H. *It is true, that there was a nagge which dyed, but hee was ſo fat and ſo faire, that hee was better than beefe.*

M. *Miſtreſſe Hoſteſſe, although he might bee more fine, giue vs not of that now.*

H. *No Sir, for he is alreadie made an end of, what think you it could laſt til now?*

M. *Let*

M. Veámos el víno que tal es.
V. El vino es tal, que básta a llevár al cielo a el, que acoſtumbráre a bevér lo.
P. Ola nueſtra áma no baſta ventéra ſi no eréje?
V. Lo que yo dígo es verdád y lo provaré que el buen víno, lleva los hombres a el çielo.
M. De que manera?
V. El buen vino cría buena ſangre, la buena ſangre engéndra buena condición, la buena condición pára buenas óbras, las buenas obras, llévan a los hombres a el cielo.
M. Ella ha aprovado ſu yntención baſtanteménte.
A. Peró no ſe podrá dezír eſſo por éſte víno.
V. Por que?
A. ✻ Por que eſto mas paréçe vinágre y água.
V. Agua, no por vida de mi ánima, que tiene mas de la, que le echó el de lo alto.
M. Pues Dios no le vino a echár água, que ſin agua lo crió.
P. Bien, nó eſtá v.m. en el quénto, el de lo alto es ſu marído, que eſtá en lo alto de la caſa, y deſde allí, écha água en el vino, por una cebratána.
A. Con vos me entiérren Pedro que ſabéys de quenta.
M. Yo entendía que llamáva a Dios, el de lo alto.
A. En todas las coſas ay engáño.
P. Si no es en la ropa viéja.
V. Por ciérto que tienen razón, que eſtá ya el mundo muy perdído, por éſſo nos hémos recogído mi marído y yo a éſta vénta, por acabár en buena vida.
M. Eſta llamáys buena vida hueſpeda?
P. Si Señór, que peor éra la de los de Sodóma y Gomórra.
V. No le paréçe a v. m. que es buena vida eſtár hechos hermitaños en eſte diſyerto, que mas hiziéron los padres de el yermo?

P. Y

M. Let vs ſee the wine that is ſo good.
H. The wine is ſuch, that it is ſufficient to bring a man to heauen that ſhall vſe to drinke it.
P. What now Miſtreſſe, is it not enough to be a keeper of an Inne, except you be an heretike too?
H. That which I ſay is true, and I will proue it, that good wine carrieth men vp to heauen.
M. How ſo?
H. Good wine makes good blood, good blood doth engender good condition, good condition doth end in good workes, good workes carry men to heauen.
M. She hath proued her intent very ſufficiently.
A. But this cannot bee verified in this wine.
H. Why?
A. Becauſe this ſeemes rather vineger and water.
H. Water, by the life of my ſoule, it hath no more water in it, than he from aboue put in it.
M. God neuer came to put water into wine, but without water he created it.
P. Well, you vnderſtand not the matter a right. He from aboue is hir huſband, which is in the top of the houſe, and from thence puts water into the wine with a long tunnell.
A. I will dye and line with thee Peter, for thou knoweſt faſhions.
M. I vnderſtood that ſhe had called God, him that was from aboue.
A. In euery thing there is deceit.
P. Except it be in an old garment.
H. Truly they haue reaſon, for the world is very bad, for this cauſe haue my husband and I withdrawen our ſelues into this Inne, to make an end in good life.
M. Call you this a good life Hoſteſſe?
P. Yea Sir, for that of Sodom and Gomorra was worſe.
H. Doe you not thinke that it is a good life to be made Hermits in this deſart, what did the Fathers in the Wilderneſſe more than this?

P. And

P. Ytan virtuólos, que de limósna, a quantos paſſan les quítan lo que llévan.

P. And ſo holy that of pure almes, of as many as paſſe they take away that they carrie.

V. Quitar, nunca Dios tal quiera, reçebir lo que nos dan con cortesía, ello ſi.

H. Take away, God forbid, receiue that they giue vs with curteſie that wee doe.

P. Es el cáſo, que llaman cortesía a la gançúa, con que ábren las viçáças.

P. Thus it is, they call the picklocke curteſie, with which they open the mailes.

V. El diablo trúxo a éſte moço a mi caſa, vete con todos los diáblos, eſpíritu de contradición.

M. The deuill brought this ſeruant to my houſe, get thee hence in the deuils name, thou ſpirit of contradiction.

P. ✻ Mal me quieren mis comádres, por que les dígo las verdádes.

P. My goſſips cannot abide me, becauſe I ſpeake truth vnto them truly.

M. Aóra Pedro, haze quenta con la huéſpeda, y vamos de aquí, que es tarde.

M. Now Peter reckon with the hoſteſſe and let vs be gone hence, for it is late.

P. Que ſe deve de todo huéſpeda?

P. Hoſteſſe what is owing in the whole?

V. Eſpéreſe, contaré, dos de paja, y de paja dos, tres de çebada, çinco de víno, vno de carne y dos de toçíno, veynte reales en todo.

H. Tarie I little, I will reckon, two of ſtraw, and of ſtraw two, three of barley, fiue of wine, one of fleſh, and two of bacon, ten ſhillings in the whole.

P. ✻ Quénta hecha, mula muerta, eſcudéro y'os a pie, pues a mi me quiére dar papilla ſeñóra huéſpeda, ✻ no ſave, que quando élla naçió, ya yo comía pan con cortéça: eſpére haré yo la mia.

P. The reckoning made, the mule dead, ſeruing man get your way a foot why the miſtreſſe hoſteſſe will giue me pap, doth ſhe not know, that when ſhe was borne, then did I eat bread with harde cruſt, tarrie Ile make my reckoning.

V. Haze, veámos.

H. Make it, let vs ſee.

P. ✻ Tres y dos ſon çinco, dos de blanco y tres de cſtópas y pez, vno de la ólla y dos de la chólla, y médio de la çebólla, ocho ſon en todos.

*P. Three and two are fiue, two of ſacke, & three of wine ſomewhat blacke, and other three of the hurdes of flax and pitch, one of the pot, and two of the * nowle, and a halfe of the chibbowle, they are eight in the whole.*

** The hinder part of the head.*

V. Malos años para vos, págame aquí, ſi no, por el ſiglo de mi padre que os arañe élla cára.

H. What with a miſchiefe to you, pay mee heere; if not, by my fathers ſoule Ile put out thine eies.

P. ✻ Quitádo ſe ha el gáto la ropa de la ypocrasía, ſeñóra hermitáña, tenga paciéncia y no tanta codícia.

*P. The cat hath caſt off the * garment of hypocriſie, miſtris Hermite haue patience, and be not ſo couetous.*

** The cat fayning hir ſelfe a Hermite, put on a Hermits weed and many beaſts and creatures came to hir for ghoſtly counſell, at laſt came the mice, which when ſhe ſpied, flung off the garment and to them.*

V. ✻ No me quente mortuórios, ſi no pagué me, ſi no, las bárbas le ſacaré vna a vna.

H. Doe not reckon vp mortuaries vnto me, but pay me, if not I will pull off the haires of thy beard one by one.

M. Da le, lo que pidiére, la huéſpeda Pedro no riñas con ella.

M. Giue that which the Hoſteſſe doth require Peter & braule not with hir.

P. En vna náo cargáda de plata, no ay hárto para contentárla.

P. In a ſhip loaden with ſiluer there is not enough to content hir.

V. No pído ſi no lo juſto, paga me hermáno

H. I require nothing but my right, pay me brother

mánoy déxate de palabras.

* All in one ſong.

P. Anſi dize la picáza, tome ſeñóra ve ay dóze reáles, los ſeis ſon de buéno, y los ſeis de mal provécho le hágan.

V. Mas no, ſi no los ſeis, ſon de bien venídos ſéan, y los ſays de en óra mala váys.

P. ✠ Maldiciónes de putas viéjas, oraçiónes ſon de ſalúd.

M. Quéde ſe con Dios Señóra huéſpeda.

V. El váya con vueſtras merçédes, aqui eſtá éſta pobre poſáda para todas las vézes que viniéren eſte camino, les ſuplíco ſe ſirvan délla.

* i. Their money.

P. ✠ Sobre buen haz de pája tía.

V. No, ſino por ſus ojos bellídos lo harán.

P. Quede con dios tía, y el la hága buena hermitáña.

V. Anda con dios hijo, y el os hága mejór de lo que ſóys.

brother and leaue off words.

*P. So ſaith the * chattering Pie, hold miſtres, ſee here ſix ſhillings, three of them be much good doe it you with them, and the other three the diuell choake you with them.*

H. Not ſo, but the one three are of welcome vnto me, and the other three the diuell goe with thee.

P. Curſings of old whoores are prayers of health.

M. God be with you miſtres hoſteſſe.

H. God conduct your Worſhips, here is this poore Inne, for as often as you ſhall come this way, I entreat you to vſe it at your command.

*P. * Aunt you doe it vpon a good ſheafe of ſtraw.*

H. No, but onely for your faire lookes Sir.

P. Aunt, God be with you, and make you a good Hermite.

H. Farewell ſonne, and God make thee better than that thou art.

Diálogo quinto, entre tres Pájes, llamados *el uno Iuan, el otro Franciſco, el* otro Guzman, en el qual ſe contienen, *las ordinárias plátícas que los Pájes ſuelen tenér unos con otros.*

The fift Dialogue, betweene three Pages, called the one of them Iohn, the other *Frances, the other Guzman, wherein are* contained the ordinary ſpeeches which Pages are wont to haue one with the other.

I. DE donde viénes Franciſco?
F. De la corte Iuan.
I. Que ay por allá de nuevo?
F. El rollo ſe eſtá adonde ſolía, el Rey ha mandádo que quien tuviére que comér, que cóme, y el otro que ayúne.

I. Viſte a la Réyna?
F. A la de diamantes con que híze el poſtrer flux.
I. Luego jugado has.
F. Yo no, mis dineros jugáron al trocádo, y trocáron me por otro dueño.
I. Ganáſte o perdíſte?

F. Gané

I. FRom whence come you Frances?
F. From the Court Iohn.
I. What is the newes there?
F. The gallowes is where it was wont to be, the King hath commanded that he that hath any thing to dinner, that he eat it, and he that hath not that he faſt.
I. Haue you ſeene the Queene?
F. The Queene of Diamonds with which I made the laſt fluſh.
I. Haſt thou now beene at gaming?
F. Not I, my money plaied at exchange, and changed me for another maſter.
I. Haſt thou won or loſt?

F. I

F. Gané y perdí.
I. Como púdo ſér?
F. Perdí mis dinéros, y gané eſcarmiénto para no jugár mas.
I. No ſería pérdida la del dinero, ſi tu llevaſſes adelante eſſe propóſito, peró yo digo, que quien hízo, hará.
F. A lo menos mientras me durare el Eſcozór, no jugaré mas.
I. Eſſe no te durare mas que haſta llegár de aquí a tu caſa, o haſta que tengas mas dinéros.
F. Pues yo para que quiero el dinero, tengo de comprár caſas, o viñas con ello.
I. Para embiár a tus pariéntes, o para luzírte con ello.
F. Luzírme o que? malos años, Lúzgame el puto de mi ámo pues ſe ſirve de mi.
I. Pues pienſas que te ha de durár tu ámo toda la vída?
F. Dure lo que duráre, como cuchár de pan, que quando éſte me falte, no faltará otro tan ruyn como el.
I. Y quando ſéas gran de?
F. Eſtonces ya ſabémos el paradéro de los pajes, o ala guérra, o a un monaſtério, o a la hórca.
I. Eſſo poſtrero lo le renuncio en ti.
F. Pues penſais vos eſca páros por ypócrita?
I. Hermáno, en mi liñáje nunca úvo ningun ahorcádo, no quiero eſtrenárlo yo.
F. Eſtrenada os darán la ſoga, no os penſeys por eſſo.
I. Pienſa el ladrón que todós ſon de ſu condición, yo hermano no piénſo hazér obras por donde la meréſca.
F. Pues no as oýdo dezír, que el penſár no es ſabér, eſſo ſin penſár ſe verná antes que vn colongía.
I. Yo bien créo, que ſi yo trato mucho contígo, que tu me procurerás pegár la tiña, porque vn puerco

F. *I haue woon, and I haue loſt.*
I. *How could that be?*
F. *I loſt my money, and got a warning to play no more.*
I. *The loſſe of money ſhould bee no loſſe, if thou didſt goe forward in this purpoſe, but I ſay, that he that hath once plaied will play againe.*
F. *At the leaſt, while the ſmarting ſhall laſt I will play no more.*
I. *That will not laſt with thee longer, than till thou commeſt home, or vntill thou haſt more money.*
F. *What ſhould I doe with money, am I to buy houſes or vineyards with it?*
I. *To ſend it to thy friends and kinred, or to make thy ſelfe trim with it.*
F. *To make my ſelfe trim? a plague take it, let the Buggerer my Maſter trim me ſeeing he ſerues himſelfe of me.*
I. *Why thinkeſt thou thy maſter is to liue with thee for euer?*
F. *Let him laſt as long as a ſpoone of bread, when he is wanting to me, there will not faile another as bad as hee.*
I. *And when thou art better growen in yeares?*
F. *Then we know the end of Pages, either to the warre, or to a monaſterie, or to the gallowes.*
I. *This laſt I leane to thee.*
F. *Why thinke you to ſcape becauſe you are an Hypocrite?*
I. *Brother, in my kinred neuer was there any hanged, I will not hanſell the gallowes.*
F. *They will giue you a halter for hanſell, take you no care for that.*
I. *Well thinkes the theefe, that all are as himſelfe, I brother doe not thinke to doe any thing that I may deſerue the gallowes.*
F. *But haſt thou not heard ſay, that opinion is no knowledge, this without thinking will come ſooner then a Canonſhip.*
I. *I well beleeue, that if I deale much with thee, thou wilt infect mee with mangineſſe, for one hog that hath wallowed*

puerco encenagádo, ſiempre procúra encenagár a ótro.

F. Dizes verdád, que ſi el ladrón anda con el hermitáño, o el ladrón ſerá hermitaño, o el hermitaño ladrón, peró tu nunca juegas?

I. Yo no en mi vída.

F. Pues tente bien no cáygas, porque a fee que ſi cáes, que as de ſer como los borráchos que comiénçan tarde a ſer lo, que por eſquitárſe de lo que han dexádo de bevér, nunca ſálen de cueros.

I. Si Dios me guarde mi juyzio, yo me guardaré deſſe vício.

F. Mas fuerte éra Tróya, y fue deſtruyda.

I. Dexémos éſſo agóra, y díme como te va con tu ámo?

F. A mi muy bien, porque como es moço, galán, y enamorádo, ſon tres coſas que ſácan de harón al mas cuerdo, y anſi todo ſe nos va en fieſtas, vna libréa oy, ótra mañána, ſiempre en ſaráos, músicas, y dánças, ſiempre en combites, que mal año para Lançarote quando de Bretaña víno, ſi éra tan bien tratádo como noſotros.

I. Si peró a fée que créo, que tras buen bocádo, dais buen grito.

F. Porque dízes éſſo?

I. Porque me parece que ſi vueſtro ámo dánça de la manera, voſotros no avéys d'eſtár ociósos, ſino que avéys de çapateár, porque en caſa del músico, todos los criádos ſon dançántes.

F. Es verdád, que eſſo a coſadíllos nos trae de dia con recaudos, y de noche con rondas, peró con el buen peſébre, todo ſe paſſa y no como tu que eſtás ſerviéndo a vn pelón, que te deve matár de hambre.

I. No mata, porque yo nunca túve vida, deſpues que eſtóy con el.

F. No tiéne buen ordinário?

I. La

wallowed in the mire will beray another.

F. *Thou ſayeſt true, for if a theefe keepe companie with a hermit, either a theefe ſhall become a hermit, or a hermit a theefe, but doſt thou neuer play?*

I. *I, neuer in my life.*

F. *Then hold faſt, fall not, for in faith if thou falleſt, thou art like to be as drunken men, which beginne at length ſo to be, which to quit themſelues of that they haue left to drinke, they neuer get out of drunkenneſſe.*

I. *If God keepe me in my right minde, I will keepe my ſelfe from this vice.*

F. *Troy was more ſtrong, and yet was ouercome.*

I. *Let vs leaue this now, and tell me how your maſter and you agree?*

F. *I like very well of him, for he is young, gallant, and in loue, they are three things which buſie the wiſeſt man, & ſo we are altogither in feaſtings, one liuery to day, another to morrow, neuer without good cheere, muſicke, dances, and banquets, that the deuill take* Lançarote *when he came from Brittaine if he were ſo well entreated as we are.*

I. *Yea, but in faith I beleeue that after a good morſell, you pay well for it.*

F. *Why ſaieſt thou ſo?*

I. *For I thinke, that if your maſter dance in ſuch ſort, you are not altogether idle, but that you foot it too, for in a muſitians houſe all the ſeruants are dancers.*

F. *It is true, that by reaſon of this loue ſmall occaſions driue vs in the day time with letters, and in the night we round the ſtreet, but with good fare we paſſe ouer all this, and not as thou doſt which ſerueſt a miſerable wretch, which killeth thee with hunger.*

I. *He kils me not, for I neuer had life ſince I came to him.*

F. *Hath he not a good ordinarie table?*

I. *Wretched-*

I. La lazéria es ordinaria en cáſa.

F. Que os da a comér?
I. Eſperanças y folías.
F. Con éſto eſtás tan gordo?
I. De los Tovillos ſi eſtoy.
F. Dalle cantonáda.
I. Temo de encontrár otro peór, y no querría por huýr de la llama dár en las bráſas.
F. Haz te cuchillo de melonéro, provár muchos haſta hallár uno buéno.

I. Luégo cobra hombre mala fama, y le ✻ dízen Piédra movedíza no la cobre móho, y todo el mundo le da del cobdo.
F. No ſino dexáos ſecár como palo en ſarmentéra.
I. Adonde vas tu agóra?
F. A buſcár mi ámo, y témo que no le tengo de podér hallár.
I. Adonde le perdiſte?
F. Yo no le perdí, el ſe perdió muchas dias ha.
I. Anſi yrá un perdído a buſcár otro perdído, como un duelo búſca otro duélo, y una necedád a otra, porque *Pares cum paribus facillimè congregantur.*
F. Bendito ſea Dios, que por tres blancas de gramática que ſtudió, ya no ſe cabe en el cuérpo, y no vée la ora que deſembuchár lo.

I. Dígo hermano, que cada obéja con ſu paréja, y vn ſemijante buſca a ótro.
F. Anſi tu ámo como es miſeráble pelón, buſca vn ypócrita como tu, a quien con dezílle que es menéſtér ayunár para yr al ciélo, te tiene en diéta perpétua, y canoníza por virtúd, lo que es miſéria ſína.
I. No tienes razón, que el no es avariénto, peró como dízen Pobréza no es vileza.
F. No, mas es maeſtra que enſeña como ſe ha de hazér.
I. Yo ſe, que ſi mi ámo tuviére la rénta del

I. Wretchedneſſe it ſelfe is his ordinary proviſion in houſe.
F. What diet doth he giue you?
I. Hopes and ſongs.
F. And with this art thou ſo fat?
I. If I be fat, it is in my ankle bones.
F. Run away from him.
I. I am afraid to meet with a worſe, and I would not leape out of the frying pan, and fall into the fire.
F. Make of thy ſelfe a knife to cut pumpions, proue many vntill you finde one good.
I. Straightway a man gets an ill name, and they ſay a rolling ſtone gathereth no moſſe, and euery one iuſtleth him aſide.
F. No but ſuffer your ſelfe to dry as ſtickes on a pile or heape.
I. Whither goeſt thou now?
F. To ſeeke my maſter, and I feare that I ſhall not finde him.
I. Where didſt thou loſe him?
F. I loſt him not, hee loſt himſelfe a great while agoe.
I. So one that is loſt himſelfe, goeth to ſeeke another that is loſt, as one griefe ſeekes another griefe, and one folly another: for like will to like.
*F. God be bleſſed, that for * three blankes of Grammer which he hath ſtudied, now he cannot keepe it in his belly, and he thinkes euery houre ten, till he hath vttered his whole minde.*
I. I ſay brother, euery ſheepe with his equall, and like will to like.

F. So thy maſter as he is a miſerable wretch ſeeks out an hypocrite like thy ſelfe, and by telling thee how requiſite it is to faſt for the winning of heauen doth hold thee in continuall diet, and extols that for a vertue, which is pure miſerableneſſe.
I. You ſay not well, for he is not couetous, but as it is ſaid, Pouertie is not vileneſſe.
F. No, but it is a miſtris which doth teach vs how we ſhould become niggardly.
I. I know, if my maſter had reuennes as thy

* *A blanke halfe a Maravedí, a Maravedí 34. of them to ſix pence.*

del tuyo que gaſtára mas que el, lo qual el nos díze que hará muy complidaménte ſi dios le mejóra d'eſtádo.

F. De manéra que éſſas ſon las eſperánças que coméis.

I. Mas vale que agua, como dezía la véja que mojáva el ſarmiénto en el rio y le chupáva.

F. Con eſſa comída no dubdo dexéis de ſalír buénos girifáltes al cabo del año.

* i. *With this dyet you may be light enough to flie.*

I. Si peró, ſi bolamos tan alto, llevárnos ha el viento, como haze a todos los que ſe ſuſténtan de ſemejánte manjár.

F. Por vida de tu madre, que renta tiéne tu ámo?

I. Yo te lo diré, vn quento de mentíras, y otro de neceſſidádes, y vn millón de necedádes, y todo éſto ſe gaſta cada año, de ſuerte, que viéne a ſalír a rata por cantidád.

F. Quantos caválos tiene?

I. Dize que cinco con quátro que ſe le an muerto.

F. Quantos criádos?

I. Nónes ſon, y no llégan a tres.

F. De ſuerte que tu ſolo le ſirves.

* i. *In going vp and downe ſhifting for myſelfe, and not liuing on my maſter.*

I. Y aun me podrían açotár por vagamúndo.

F. Pues como ſiendo ſolo, no tiénes mucho en que entendér.

I. Si tengo, en contár láſtimas y calamidádes.

F. Quando tiempo ha que bives con el?

* i. *Of hunger.*

I. Que muéro con el muchos dias ha.

F. Hermáno, hermáno, quien ſi mude Dios le ayude.

I. Si, mas adonde yrá el buey que no áre, por donde quiera véo cien leguas de mal camíno.

F. Aquí viene Guzmanillo, veámos que nuevas trae, a Guzman que ay de nuevo?

G. Muchas coſas, el Turco (dizen que) ſe ha tornado Moro, que Venécia nada en agua, y que Ytália eſtá llena de hombres, que en Fráncia

* i. *Stands built vpon the ſea, the ſea compaſſing it round about.*

maſter hath, that he would ſpend more then he doth, which he telleth vs he will performe with the beſt, if it pleaſe God to better his eſtate.

F. So then theſe bee the hopes which you feed on.

I. It is better then water, as the old woman ſaid, which dipped a dry ſticke in the riuer and ſucked it.

*F. With this dyet I doubt not but at the yeeres end you may proue good * Gerſalcons to flie.*

I. Yea but if we flie ſo high, the wind will carrie vs away, as it doth all thoſe which doe feed on ſuch diet.

F. By the life of thy mother, what reuenue hath thy maſter?

I. I will tell thee, a thouſand thouſands of lies, and another of needs, a million of fooleries, and all this is ſpent euery yeare in ſuch ſort, that hee ſpends as much as comes in to him.

F. How many horſes hath he?

I. He ſaith fiue, with thoſe ſoure which are dead.

F. How many ſeruants?

I. They are odde, and yet they mount not to three.

F. So then thou alone ſerueſt him.

*I. * And yet might they whip me for a vagabond.*

F. How ſo, ſeeing thou art alone, thou haſt not much to imploy thy ſelfe on.

I. But I haue much to do to reckon grieſes and calamities.

F. How long haſt thou lined with him?

*I. I haue been * dying with him long ſince.*

F. Brother, brother, God wil him help, that ſeekes for it himſelfe.

I. Yea, but where ſhall the oxe goe that he ſhall not labour, which way ſoeuer I ſee a hundred leagues of ill way.

F. Here comes little Guzman, let vs ſee what newes he brings. Hoe Guzman, what newes?

*G. Many things, the Turke (as they ſay) is become a Moore or Infidell, * Venice ſwims in water, and Italy is full of people, and that in France there*

cia ay mas de cien mil hombres de guerra, y tambien se dize de secreto que el conde de Flandes a dormido con la Reyna de España.

F. Todo esso ay de nuevo?

G. Aora viniéron con este correo éstas nuévas.

F. De luengas vías luengas mentíras suelen venír.

G. Lo que yo os he dícho, todo es tan verdád, como ser aora de día.

F. Luego grandes guérras se aparéjan éste veráno.

G. Los pronósticos dízen, que éste veráno los que biviéren, verán grandes maravíllas.

F. Que maravíllas serán, cuenta nos las.

G. Dízen que el sol será mayór que toda la tiérra.

F. Santo Dios, y esso ha de sér verdád?

G. Y que la lúna cada noche aparéce de su manéra, que las estrellas sino fuesse por el sol no ternán resplandór ningúno, que los ríos corren a la már, que arderán muchos montes, que avrá grande mortandád de todo género de ganados, y en todas las ciudádas avrá unos mónstruos que echarán llamas por la boca, y los hombres que no coméron lo que éstos vomitâren, morirán.

F. Vale me Dios, yo pienso que todo esso es mentíra.

G. Los Pronósticos dízen, que el sol y la luna faltarán, antes que tódas éssas cosas fálten.

F. Dessa manéra, todos los hómbres morirán, porque quien ha de comér lo que vomitáren los monstruos?

G. Pues os tu comído vn asno entéro, y no comerás de aquello?

F. Si yo soy asno, vos soys mula.

G. Xo que te estriégo que lárgas le naciéron a v. m.

F. Tan lárgas como sus narízes.

G. Va a vér a tu tía Hermáno?

F. No que ya ví a tu madre, en la pellejería.

there are more then a hundred thousand men of armes, and also they say in secret, that the Earle of Flanders hath lien with the Queene of Spaine!*

* The King of Spaine in his title Earle of Flanders.

F. Is there all this newes?

G. These newes came now with this post.

F. Farre fetched lies come from farre.

G. That which I haue told you is as true as it is now day light.

F. Then great warres are like to bee this Summer.

G. The Prognostications say, those that shall liue this Summer shall see great wonders.

F. What shall those wonders be, I pray thee tell them vs.

G. They say the Sunne shall be bigger then all the earth.

F. Blessed God, and will this proue true?

G. And that the Moone euery night doth appeare after hir old fashion, that the Stars if it were not for the Sunne, should haue no light, that all riuers runne into the sea, that many* mountaines shall burne, that there shall be a great slaughter of all kinde of* cattell, and in all cities there shall be Monsters which shall cast* out fire at the mouth, and those men which shall not eat that which these monsters shall vomit, they die.*

* i. Starres receiue their light of the Sunne.

* As mount Aetna in Sicilie and others which continually cast out fire and brimstone, &c.

* For mans meat to eat.

* i. Ouens wherein they bake bread

F. God help me, I thinke all this to be a lye.

G. The Prognostications say, that the Sun and the Moone shall faile of their courses, rather then these things to faile.

F. By this meanes, all men shall die, for who can eat that which these monsters shall vomit?

* Made a gull.

G. Why hast thou swallowed downe an asse whole, and wilt not eat of it?*

F. If I be an asse, thou art a mule.

*G. * Ho I do rub thee, for they are sprung vp very* long to your Worship.*

* Hoe, a voice that carters vse to make their horses stand still.

* i. Long eares, calling him thereby asse.

F. So long as your nose.

G Goe you to see your aunt brother?

* Calling of him by this a Iew, which for the most part haue long noses.

F. Not so, for I saw thy mother in a brothel-

lejería. *houſe.*

* Ha & Rallíme, *then it is Grate me, and* Harra allá, *then it is haight that way, as one ſaith to an aſſe.*

G. *Harrallame eſſe quéſo. *G. Grate me this cheeſe.*

F. Harralláme eſſe aſno. *F. Haight that way this aſſe.*

G. Toda la vida has de comér ſin pláto? *G. What art thou to eat thy meat all thy life without a platter?*

F. Toda la vída has de comér tu cabrón? *F. Art thou to eat all thy life of Goats fleſh?*

G. O Dios te bendíga la bella alimaña. *G. O God bleſſe thee faire beaſt.*

F. O Dios te deſpache déſte mundo para el otro. *F. O God rid thee out of this world into the other.*

G. Dízen me que es v. m. gran comedór de huévos aſſádos. *G. They tell me that you are a great eater of hard egges.*

F. Tambien me han dícho a mi que v. m. come muy bien bacaláo. *F. Alſo they tell me that you eat very well poore Iohn.*

G. O ſi todos los áſnos truxéran albárdas, que buen oficio era el, de los albardéros. *G. O if all aſſes ſhould carrie pack-ſadles, what a good trade ſhould the pack-ſadler haue.*

F. Si eſſo fuere anſi, vna mas tenía de coſta vueſtro ámo cada més. *F. If it were ſo, your maſter ſhould bee at the charge of one packe-ſaddle more euery moneth.*

G. Si del nécio ſe uviéra de pagár alcavála, quanto ganáran los Alcavaléros con v. m? *G. If there ſhould bee ſubſidie gathered vp of euery foole, how much would the gatherers of the ſubſidies put into their purſe with your Worſhip?*

F. En éſſa hazienda nádie podria tratár, porque dizque es património de v. m. *F. In this goods none could meddle, becauſe it is ſaid it is your patrimony.*

G. Todo es de vn pedáço v. m. *G. All your Worſhip is one peece.*

F. Si, peró es de aguijón para picár a v. m. *F. Yea, but it is a pricke to ſpurre you forward.*

G. Mas no créo que es ſino de atun de yjáda. *G. But I beleeue it not but that it is a peece of a Tunnie fiſh of the belly ſide.*

F. Si de atun fuéra ya v. m. uviéra arremetido a la pieça, como el aſno a la ceváda. *F. If it were of a Tunnie fiſh, you had ſet vpon a peece of it as greedily as an aſſe on the prouender.*

G. Parece me hermáno que aunque tu entráſte en la corte, nunca la corte entró en ti. *G. It ſeemes to me brother, although thou entredſt into the Court, the Court neuer entred vnto thee.*

F. En la de los puércos concédo, porque como es tu juridición, no ſe háze en ella, ſino lo que tu ordénas. *F. In that of hogs I grant, for as it is thy iuriſdiction, there is nothing done therein but that thou doeſt appoint.*

G. Por vída tuya que me digas, quantos curſos tienes de nécio. *G. I pray thee tell me how many degrees of a foole haſt thou?*

F. Los miſmos que vos de majadéro. *F. As many as thou haſt of a ioulthead.*

G. Yo pienſo, que éras ya doctór en ynſenſato. *G. I thinke thou waſt Doctor in ſenceleſneſſe.*

F. Y vos eſtáys graduádo por cavalleríza. *F. And you taken degree in the ſtable.*

G. A Dios hermáno, y roe bien éſſos granjónes. *G. Farewell Brother, and gnaw well theſe hunkes.*

F. Y *F. And*

F. Y rumiád vos como buen cabrón eſótros.

I. Par diez, bueno te ha parado el amígo.

F. Amígo ſerá el de vna taça de vino.

I. E'ſte es de los que aconcejáva el óſſo, que hiziéſſemos poco caſo.

F. Como es eſſe quento ?

I. Quenta Yſópo, que vna véz dos amígos ván camíno a pie, por vn monte, y ſalió a ellos vn óſſo, el vno echando mano a ſu eſpada, ſe quíſo defendér a ſi y a ſu compañéro, al qual díxo que hiziéſſe lo miſmo, para que ni el vno ni el ótro muriéſſen: el compañero que tenía mas cuenta con ſu ſalúd, que con el del ótro, a trevióſe ántes a ſus pies, que a ſus mános, y no curando del compañéro, dio a huýr a vn árbol álto que allí vído, y ſe ſubió en el, donde eſtuvo ſegúro del peligro. El compañéro viſto que el ſolo no ſe podía defenderſe del óſſo, ſe dexó caér en tiérra haziéndo muéſtras de que eſtáva muerto, tenía el huélgo y no reſolláva miéntras el óſſo llegó y le olió todo, las narízes y la boca, y los cýdos, y penſando que eſtáva muérto, ſe fue de allí, ſin hazérle ningun daño. El que eſtáva en el árbol, víſto que el óſſo era ýdo, baxó del, y pregunto a ſu compañéro, que éra aquello que el oſſo le avía dicho al oýdo: El otro reſpondió, dezíame que con tan ruynes compañeros como vos nunca hiziéſſe camíno otra vez.

F. Reſpondió muy diſcretaménte, y ſi yo lo ſupiéra ántes, uviéra le contádo eſſe quénto a eſtotro mierda en palíllo, que pienſa que ſábe mas que Bártulo ni Baldo.

I. Por cierto el túvo demaſiada razón, amotejarte de nécio pues eſtuviſte

F. *And brouſe you as a good he-goat theſe others.*

I. *By ten, thy friend hath brought thee to a good paſſe.*

F. *He will rather proue a friend to a cup of wine.*

I. *This is ſuch a friend that the Beare counſelled that we ſhould make but little reckoning of.*

F. *How is that tale ?*

I. *Æſope tels, that on a time two friends trauelled a foot together, and going by a wood, a Beare came out to them, the one laying hand on his ſword meant to defend himſelfe & his companion, whom he willed that he ſhould doe the like, that neither one of them nor the other might not miſcarrie: his companion which made more account of his owne ſafetie then his fellowes, was more bold vpon his feet then vpon his hands, and not reſpecting his fellow, betooke himſelfe to fly to a high tree which there he ſaw, and climed vp the ſame, where he was ſafe from the danger. His companion ſeeing that alone he could not defend himſelfe from the Beare, caſt himſelfe down on the ground, making ſhewes that he was dead, he held his breath and did not once blow while the beare came & ſmelt him round, his noſe and his mouth, and his eares, thinking he had been dead went his way without doing him any harme. Hee that was in the tree, ſeeing that the Beare was gone, came downe the tree, and asked his fellow what was that that the Beare had told him in his eare: The other anſwered, he told me that with ſuch bad companions as your ſelfe I neuer ſhould trauell againe.*

F. *He anſwered very well, and if I had knowne it before, I would haue told this tale to this turd vpon a ſtucke, which thinks he knowes more than* Bartulus *or* Baldus.

I. *Truly he had too too much cauſe to ſcoffe at thee for a foole, ſeeing*

víſte tan torpe que no entendíſte ſus pronóſticos y adivinánças.

F. Pues tu entiéndes las mejór?

I. Yo entiendo las como el las díxo.

F. Pues yo bien créo que entiéndo Romançe, y el en Romance hablá-va que no en algaravía.

I. Pues quieres vér como debáxo del ſayál ay al : y que aun que te habló en Eſpañol, es algaravía de allende para ti.

F. Ya lo deſſéo vér como es.

I. Pues lo primero que díxo que el Turco ſe ha tornádo móro, es lo el de profeſſión y de ley, y ſuelo ſiempre : tódos ſíguen la ſeta de Mahóma. Que Venécia náda en água, es verdád que eſtá fundada en la már, que Yrália eſtá lléna de hómbres, tambien es verdád como Ynglatiérra lo eſtá, Tambien que en Fráncia, ay mas de cien mil hombres de guerra, quien no lo ſábe que quando el Rey quiera, podrá ſacár della mas de dozientos mil.

F. Todo éſſo bien lo entiendo yo, peró lo de más, como ſe puede entendér, que el conde de Flandes aya dormído con la Réyna deſpaña y no ſe anda el mundo en guerras.

I. Pues bobo no ſábes tu, que el conde de Flandes y el Rey Deſpaña es todo una própria perſona.

F. Iuro a tal, que tiene razón, que no avía yo caýdo en ello.

I. Pues lo demas que díze que el ſol es mayor que toda la tierra, es muy gran verdád, ſegun demonſtracióne Aſtrológicas, que yo con ſabér poco te las pudiéra dár a entendér, ſi uviéra lugár. Que la luna aparecerá cada noche de ſu manera, eſſo tu lo vées cada dia con ſus creſciéntes y menguantes, nunca eſtá una noche, como eſtúvo otra : pues que arderán muchos móntes, tambien es verdád, que ay en el mundo muchos que

thou wert ſo dull that thou vnderſtoodeſt not his prognoſtications and diuinings.

F. Doeſt thou then vnderſtand them better?

I. I vnderſtand them as he ſpake them.

F. But I beleeue well that I vnderſtand Spaniſh, and he ſpake in Spaniſh and not in the Moores tongue.

I. But wilt thou ſee, how vnder courſe attire is ſome wiſdome, and although he ſpake Spaniſh it is the Moores tongue to thee.

F. I deſire to ſee how it is.

I. The firſt then that hee ſaid, that the Turke is become a Moore or an Infidell, he is ſo by his profeſſion and law, and alwaies hath beene: all follow the ſect of Mahomet. That Venice doth ſwim in water, it is true, for it is built in the ſea : that Italy is full of men, alſo it is true as England is : alſo that in France are more than a hundred thouſand men of armes, who knowes it not, that when the King will, hee may draw out thereof more than two hundred thouſand.

F. All this I vnderſtand well, but the reſt how is it to be vnderſtood, that the Earle of Flanders hath lien with the Queene of Spaine, and the world not to be vp in armes.

I. Why foole doſt not know, that the Earle of Flanders and the King of Spaine is all one perſon.

F. I ſweare by ſuch a one, hee ſaith true, that I did not light vpon.

I. But the reſt, which he ſaith, that the ſun is bigger then the whole earth, is very true, according to aſtrologicall demonſtrations, which I in knowing but a little could eaſily make thee vnderſtand, if there were time and place, that the Moone will appeare as it was wont, that thou ſeeſt continually with hir waxing and waning, ſhe is neuer one night as ſhe was the other night: then that many mountaines ſhall burne, alſo it is true, for there be many

que lláman Bolcánes, como el de Sicília, que, siempre está ardiendo. Que morirá mucho ganado, quien lo ygnóra que lo han de matár los hombres para comér.

many in the world, as mount Ætna in Sicilie, which alwaies burnes, &c. that there shall bee a great slaughter of cattell who is ignorant thereof, for men are to kill them for to eat them.

F. Todo esso entiendo bien, peró aquello de aquéllos mónstruos, que echarán llamas por la boca, y que hémos de comér lo que ellos vomitáren, no puédo y pensár que séa.

F. All this I vnderstand well, but that of those monsters, which shall cast out flames out of their mouthes, and that we shall eat of that they shall vomit, I cannot thinke what it may be.

I. Esso es mas fácil que esótro, porque aquellos mónstruos, son los hórnos ado se cueze el pan, que échan llámas, y por la boca vomítan el pán que comémos.

I. This is more easie than the other, for those monsters are ouens, where they bake bread which cast out fire, and by the mouth of it, it vomiteth the bread which we eat.

F. Aora dígo que tiénes razón, y que yo estáva en bábia, y que puede vn nécio con vna necedád forjáda en su ymaginación dár en que entendér a cien sábios.

F. Now I say you say true, and that I was in foolerie, and that a foole with his foolishnesse framed in his owne imagination may giue to a hundred wise men matter to picke out.

I. Assi le a aconteció al poéta Oméro, que como con la vejéz estuviesse ciégo y se anduviésse passeando por la orilla de la már, y oyó hablár a ceirtos pescádores, que en aquel punto se estávan espulgando, y come les preguntásse que pésca hazían, éllos entendiendo por los piójos, respondiéron, los que tenémos buscámos, y los que no tenemos hallámos, pues como el buen Oméro no viésse lo que ellos hazían, y por esta causa no entendiésse la Enígma, fue tanto lo que fatigó su ymaginación y entendimiénto, por entendér la y alcançár el secreto dello, que fue bastante ésta pesadumbre a hazer le morír.

*I. So it hapned to the Poet Homer, that as he was with age blinde, and went walking by the sea shoare, & heard certaine Fishermen talking, that at that time were a lowsing themselues, and as he asked them, what fish they caught, they vnderstanding that he had meant their lice, they answered, Those that we * haue, we seeke for, and those that we * haue not wee finde, but as the good Homer could not see what they did, and for this cause could not vnderstand the riddle, it did so grieue his vnderstanding to obtaine the secret of this matter, which was a sufficient griefe to cause his death.*

* i. Haue in their clothes, i. lice.

* i. Haue not in hand.

F. El lo hízo no como sábio, sino como muy gran nécio, en martarse por lo, que no podía alcançár.

F. He did that not as a wise man, but as a very great foole, in casting away himselfe for that he could not reach vnto.

I. Yo bien créo que no morirás tu desse acháque.

I. I well beleeue thou wouldst not die for such a matter.

F. No hermáno, que no páre ya mi madre, y yo conténto me con lo que buenaménte y sin mucho trabájo

F. No brother, for my mother is past childe bearing, and I content my selfe with that I may well and without much

trabájo puedo alcançár.

I. *Pues quien no es mas de otro, no merece mas que ótro, y quien no ſáve no vále, y quien ruyn es en ſu villa, ruyn es en Sevílla, y quien adelante no míra atras ſe hálla.*

F. Yo hermáno, quiero andár por do anda el buey, y aſentár el pie llano, no tomár de las cóſas mas de aquéllo que me diéron, y porque quiero del mundo gozár, quiéro cyr, y vér y callár.

much labour reach vnto.

I. But hee that is not more then another, doth deſerue no more then another, and he that hath not knowledge, is of no worth, and hee that in his owne towne is vile, and is alſo bad and naught in Seuile, and he that lookes not before he leape, may fall into the ditch.

F. Brother, I will goe where the oxe hath troden, and ſet downe my foot ſoft and faire, not to take more matters then that they ſhall giue me, and becauſe I will liue in reſt, I will heare and ſee and hold my peace.

Diálogo ſexto, que paſſó entre dos *amígos Yngléſes y dos Eſpañóles, que ſe* juntáron en la lónja de Lóndres, en el *qual, ſe trátan muchas coſas curióſas, y de guſto, ſon los Yngleſes* Egidio y Guillérmo, *los Eſpañoles* Diégo y Alónſo.

The ſixt Dialogue which paſſed between two friends Engliſhmen, and two *Spaniards, which met vpon the Exchange in* London: wherein are handled many curious matters, and delightfull: the Engliſhmen are named *Giles* and *William*, the Spaniards *Iames* and *Alonſo*.

E. QVe hazéis Guillermo?
G. Ya lo veis Exídio.
E. Como eſtáys tan oçióſo?
G *Quia nemo me conduxit.*
E. Pues yo os conbído aun ráto de buena converçación.
G. Adónde?
E. Venid os comígo, no yréys adonde yo os lleváre?
G. Si me lo dezís priméro, por que yr hombre, ſin ſavér adonde, ſería neçedád.
E. Luego no hazéis confiánça de mi?
G. Si hágo, mas no ſabéis que no todos los umóres ſon unos, y que podrá ſer, lo que a vos os da guſto, enfadár me a mi.
E. Si, peró yo conózco ya vueſtro umór, y me acomódo con el.
G. Con todo éſſo, dezídme adonde me lleváys.
E. Vámos a la lónja, adonde me eſtán eſperando dos amígos Eſpañóles, muy diſcretos, guſtaréis de ſu buena converſación.

G. WHat doe you William?
W. You enen ſee Giles.
G. Why are you ſo idle?
W. Becauſe no man hath hired mee.
G. Then I inuite you for a while into good company.
W. Whither?
G. Come with me, will you not goe whither I ſhall leade you?
W. If you tell me firſt, for it were folly for a man to goe hee knowes not whither.
G. Doe you not now truſt me?
W. Yes I do truſt you, but do you not know, that all humours are not one, and it may be, that which likes you may very much diſpleaſe me.
G. Yea, but I know your humour, and I doe apply my ſelfe vnto it.
W. But for all this, tell me whither you carrie me.
G. Let vs goe to the Exchange where two Spaniards very diſcreet men my frends are tarrying for mee, you ſhall haue a taſte of their good conuerſation.

G. Háblan *W. Speake*

G. Hablan ynglés?

E. Vn poquíto, peró pues vos entendéis bien el Eſpañol, y yo tanbien no ympórta.

G. Huelgo me de yr, aunque no ſéa, mas de por aprendér algunas buenas fráſis Eſpañólas.

E. Eſſas ſé yo que las tiénen buenas, porque ſon de *Tolédo* donde es la príma de la lengua Eſpañóla.

G. Son por ventúra aquéllos, que ſe ándan alli paſſeándo.

E. Los própios, vámos allá, Dios guarde a vueſtas mercédes.

D. Y venga con vueſtas merçédes.

E. Paſſe adelante la converſación de que ſe tratáva aóra.

D. No pareze ſino que la entendíſtes, que reſpondíſtes a élla ſin daros el pie.

A. Tratávamos de las ſalutaciónes, que ſe úſan en *Ynglatérra*, y de las que ſe úſan in Eſpáña.

G. Quales ſon mejóres?

A. Cierto en eſto, adonde quiera, ay abúſos, quando dize el Eſpañol Dios os guarde, en ora buéna eſtéys, Dios os de ſalúd, y el Yngles buénas tárdes y ótras ſemejantes yo apruévola por buena ſalutación.

G. Pues el mundo la repruéva, y tienen por tóſcos a los que la úſan.

A. Y aun por eſſo ſe dize, que anda el mundo a el rebéz, y no ay mejór ſeñál de que ello es buéno, de vér que el mundo lo repruéba.

G. De las demas ſalutaciónes que os paréce?

A. De las de mas dígo, que quando el *Yngles* pregúnta a el ótro, como eſtáys, dize una gran neçedád, y quando el *Eſpañól* dize béſo os las manos, dize una gran mentíra.

G. Meneſtér es que déys razón, de vueſtra nueva opinión.

A. Aóra dezíme por vuéſtra vída, no os pareçe neçedad a el que vos veys bueno preguntár le como eſtá? G. Teneys

W. *Speake they Engliſh?*

G. *A very little, but ſeeing you vnderſtand well the Spaniſh and I alſo, it makes no matter.*

W. *I am glad to goe, though it be but to learne ſome good Spaniſh phraſes.*

G. *Thoſe I know they haue and good ones, becauſe they are of* Toledo *where is the prime of the Spaniſh tongue.*

W. *They are peraduenture thoſe which goe there walking.*

G. *The very ſame, let vs goe meet them, God ſaue your Worſhips.*

I. *And welcome in Gods name.*

G. *Proceed in that conference which paſſed betwixt you.*

I. *It ſeemes that you vnderſtood it, that you made anſwer to it without giuing * you the qu.*

A. *We entreated of the ſalutations which are vſed in* England, *and of thoſe which are vſed in Spaine.*

W. *Which are better?*

A. *Truly in that matter, there are abuſes on both parts, when the Spaniard ſaith God keepe you, a good houre haue you, God giue you health: and the Engliſhman God den, or good euen, and the other like, I allow it for good ſalutation.*

W. *But generally it is diſallowed, and they hold them rude that vſe it.*

A. *And therefore it is ſaid, the world goes quite contrary, and there is no better ſigne that it is good, than to ſee it diſallowed in the world.*

W. *And of the other ſalutations, what thinke you?*

A. *Of the reſt I ſay, that when the* Engliſhman *doth aske the other, how * he doth, he vtters his owne ſimplicitie, and when the* Spaniard *ſaith, I kiſſe your hands, he telleth a great lye.*

W. *You muſt giue a reaſon of your new opinion.*

A. *Now tell me I pray you, doth it not ſeeme vnto you a ſimplicitie, to aske a man whom you ſee well, how he doth?* G. *You*

* *As in plaies one takes the laſt word of anothers ſpeech, and by that knowes when to ſpeake.*

* *The Spaniard alloweth not how doe you, but how doth your worſhip or maſterſhip.*

G. Tenéys razón, peró podría tenér algun mal ſecréto que no ſe le eche de vér.

A. Eſtónçes que remedáis vos, con preguntár le como eſtá, No ſería mejór, rogára Diós, que le de ſalúd, como haze el ótro?

G. Aóra dezíd lo de el Eſpañól.

A. El Eſpañól digo, que dizé mas mentiras entre año en eſte cáſo, que reáles da por Dios, porque dezír a el que encuéntra, véſo las mános a v.m. ſi habla de preſénte, bien vémos, que miente, pues no ſe las béſa, ſi de futuro tanbien porque bien ſabémos, que quando el otro quiſiéſſe dar ſe las por muy amígo que fueſſe no ſe las querría el veſár.

G. Si peró paréçe que es vna manera de reconoſimiénto de ſuperioridád a el que díze.

A. Aſsí es, peró éſſe reconoſimiénto no éſta mas que en la lengua por * que el refran dize, manos béza hombre que querría vér cortádas.

D. Yo os diré lo que ſubcedió al propóſito, a vn cavalléro viéjo Eſpañól, con otro móço y fue, que como el moço por buena criánça, le díxo a el viéjo ſuplíco a v.m. me de las mános, que ſe las quiero beſár el viéjo confiádo en ſu anciánía, las alargó para que ſe las beſaſſe, el otro ya arrepentído ſe las aſió con las ſuyas y con muy buen donáire le díxo ſenór yo y v. m. a otros dos.

G. El moço andúvo diſcréto en hazér lo ansí, y el viéjo néçio, porque bien ſavémos, que palábras de buena criánça no oblígan.

D. Anſi es verdád, que eſſa çerimónia de beſár la mano, ſolo la deve el vaſállo a el Señór.

A. Eſſa ſola ſálua guarda tiene nueſtra coſtumbre,

G. *You ſay well, but he may haue ſome inward griefe, which appeareth not outwardly.*

A. *Then what remedy doe you giue him in asking him how he doth, were it not better to pray to God to ſend him health as the other doth?*

W. *Now tell that of the Spaniard.*

A. *The Spaniard I ſay in this caſe telleth more lies within the yeare, then he giues ſixpences for Gods ſake, for to ſay to one that hee meeteth, I kiſſe the hands of your Worſhip, if hee ſpeake of the time preſent, we well ſee that he lieth, ſeeing he doth not kiſſe them: if of the time to come, in like manner; for we well know when the other would giue him his hands to kiſſe, if hee were neuer ſo great a friend, yet he would not kiſſe them.*

W. *Yea but it ſeemeth that it is a manner of acknowledging of ſuperiority to him, to whom it is ſpoken.*

A. *So it is, but this acknowledging is no more, but in the tongue: for the Prouerbe ſaith, A man kiſſeth thoſe hands that he would ſee cut off.*

I. *I will tell you that which hapned fit for this matter, to an ancient Gentleman, a Spaniard, with another yong man; & it was, as the yong man for manners ſake ſaid to the old man, I entreat your Worſhip that you will giue me your hands, for I will kiſſe them; the old man preſuming vpon his yeares, put them out that he might kiſſe them: the other repenting, tooke him faſt by the hands with his owne hands, and with very good pleaſantneſſe, ſaid vnto him, Sir, I and your Worſhip againſt other two.*

W. *The yong man was wiſe in ſo doing, and the old man ſimple, for well we know that words of complement binde not.*

I. *It is true, this ceremonie of kiſſing the hand, onely the vaſſall oweth vnto his Lord.*

A. *This ſafegard hath our cuſtome, that with*

coſtumbre que con dezír, béſo a v. m. las mános, paréçe que es dezír, reconóſco a v. m. por mi Señór, y yo por vueſtro vaſállo.

E. Y que os paréçe de éſta coſtumbre, que tenémos en Ynglatérra de asír nos las manos vnos otros?

A. Dos manos asídas, ſiempre fue símbolo de amiſtád, peró dár los tirónes, que aquí ſe dán vno a ótro, tengo lo por poca gravedád, y no ſé ſi diga por liviandád.

E. Antes paréçe que aquello es por mas confirmación de la amiſtád.

A. E'ſſa confirmación ha de ſer con óbras, y no con ademánes ni tirónes, quanto mas que deve avér muchos que con la máno asída y tirando, le deven de eſtár con el coraçón matando le.

G. Que dizís de la otra de beſár los hombres a las mugéres publicaménte.

A. Eſſa coſtú ubre túvo ſu princípio en Róma, en el tiempo que ella floreçia, aunque ſe ynventó a diferente propóſito de el que aóra ſe úſa.

G. A que fin la ynbentáron?

A. Los Romanos aborecían tanto el víno en las mugéres, que tenián ley, en que condenáva a muérte alo que lo bevía, y porque no lo pudieſſen hazer alcondidamente, tenian liçéncia ſus parientes de beſár la, para que por el olfáto conoçieſſen, ſi lo avía bevído.

G. Si aóra ſe vbieſſen de matár todas las que lo beven, yo veo que quedaramos ſin mugéres.

E. No créo, que fuera muy gran pérdida, ſegun nos ſon cauſa de males.

G. Yo para mi tengo, que la mayor cauſa de la deſoluçion en algunas mugeres de *Ynglaterra* es eſta coſtumbre de beſallos en publico, por que con éſto piérden la

with ſaying, I kiſſe the hands of your worſhip, it ſeemes it is to ſay, I acknowledge your worſhip for my lord, and my ſelfe for your vaſſall.

G. And what is your opinion of this cuſtome, which wee haue in England to ſhake hands one with another?

A. Two hands faſtned together, alwaies hath beene a token of friendſhip, but to ſhake and plucke them, as here they doe one to another, I hold it for ſmall grauitie, and I know not whether I may call it lightnes.

G. Rather it ſeemeth that it is for the greater confirmation of friendſhip.

A. This confirmation ought to bee with workes, and not with geſtures, nor ſhaking of the hands, and ſo much the rather, becauſe there are many which with hand in hand ſhake hands, and in heart would kill each other.

W. What ſay you of that cuſtome of kiſſing betweene men and women, and that openly?

A. This cuſtome firſt began in Rome, in the time it moſt flouriſhed, although it were inuented for a different purpoſe then it is now vſed.

W. For what purpoſe was it inuented?

A. The Romanes did ſo much deteſt wine in women, that they had a law, in which they did condemne to death that woman which did drinke wine, and becauſe they might not drinke it without being knowne, their kinſfolkes had leaue to kiſſe the women, that they might know by their breath whether they had drunke wine or no.

W. If now they ſhould kill all thoſe women which drinke wine, I ſee we ſhould be quite without women.

G. I beleeue that it were not any great loſſe, ſeeing they are cauſe of many euils vnto vs.

W. I hold that the greateſt cauſe of diſſoluteneſſe in ſome women in England *is this cuſtome of kiſſing publikely, for that by this meanes they*

loſe

la verguença y a el tocamiénto del béſo, les entra vn veneno que las ynficióna.

A. Antes que ſe yntroduxéſſe éſta coſtumbre en Roma, cuenta Tito Lívio, que deſterráron de ella a vn ſenadór, perſona de mucha quénta, ſólo porque beſó a ſu mugér delante de vna híja ſúya.

G. De vn eſtrémo viniéron a dár en otro eſtrémo.

E. En Eſpaña no ſe vſa beſár los hombres a las mugéres?

D. Si béſan los marídos a ſus mugéres, y eſto allá detrás de ſiete paredes, donde aun la luz no los puéda vér.

G. Es por que los Eſpañóles ſon demaſiadaménte celozos.

A. No, ſi no, por que ſómos tan trabieſſos, que no hémos meneſtér élſe apetito, para hazér mil malos recaudos que ſería ſi tubieſſemos eſſe Ocaçión.

G. Yo créo, que antes cauſaría haſtío, y no andarían los hombres, tan golóſos, por que vedamiento es cauſa del apetito.

A. No es fuego el de la concupiſçiénçia, que ſe ahóga, por echarle mucha materia, antes es como la ydropeſía, que mientras mas el enfermo béue mas ſed tiéne.

D. Eſpecialmente entre los Eſpañóles que por ſér de complexión coléricos, eſtá *Venus* en ſu punto.

G. Yo entiéndo élſo al contrario, por que *Venus* conſiſte mas en vmedád que en calór, por lo qual entiendo que mas aptos ſon para ſemejante exercício los v'medos de complexión, que los coléricos que con de ſu naturaléza ſécos.

A. Si peró la humidád ſin calor, ſeriá como la tiérra ſin el ſol, que nó es ſufiçiénte de míſma a produzír coſa algúna.

D. Por élſe, los poetas, caſáron a *Venus* con *Bulcáno* Dios de el fuégo.

E. Mas *Bulcáno* ni *Venus* ſin *Ceres* y *Baco*

loſe their ſhamefaſtneſſe, and at the very touch of the kiſſe, there entreth into them a poiſon which doth infect them.

A. Before this cuſtome was brought into Rome, Titus Liuius telleth, that they baniſhed out of the Citie a Senator, a perſon of great account, onely becauſe he kiſſed his wife before one of his owne daughters.

W. They fell from one extremitie into another.

G. In Spaine doe not men vſe to kiſſe women?

I. Yes the husbands kiſſe their wiues, but as if it were behinde ſeuen walls, where the very light cannot ſee them.

W. It is becauſe the Spaniards are too iealous.

A. No not ſo, but becauſe we are ſo wanton, that we need nothing to helpe our appetite, to make a thouſand ill matches which would fall out if we ſhould haue this occaſion.

G. I doe rather beleeue, that it would cauſe ſatietie, and that men would not ſeeke it ſo greedily, becauſe forbidding is cauſe of deſire.

A. The fire of concupiſcence, is not ſuch as is extinguiſhed by caſting on much matter, but like the dropſie, that the more the ſicke perſon drinketh the more thirſt ſtill he hath.

I. Eſpecially among Spaniards, which are of a cholericke complexion, Venus *is in her full force.*

G. I take that quite contrarie, becauſe Venus *conſiſteth more in moiſture than in heat, whereby it ſeemes to me that the moiſt of complexion are more apt to ſuch matters, than the cholericke which are by nature drie.*

A. Yea but moiſture without heat, would be as the earth without the ſunne, which is not ſufficient of it ſelfe to bring forth any thing.

I. For this cauſe the Poets married Venus *with* Vulcan *God of fire.*

G. But neither Venus *nor* Vulcan *without* Ceres

Baco no válen vn* cáco.

Ceres *and* Bacchus *are worth a cherrie ſtone.*

* Cáco, *a fruit in the Indies or a ſmall peece of money there.*

G. Pues yo para mi tengo, que en las tierras mas frías, eſtá mas reconçentrádo el calór naturál, y por éſſo con mayór apitúd, en los que biven en las tales regiónes.

W. But I for my part thinke, that in countries moſt cold, the naturall heat is more vnited in his center, and therefore is there greater deſire in thoſe that line in thoſe countries.

A. No es eſſe calór reconçentrádo que eſtá en el coraçon el que es cauſa de eſte fuégo, ſino el que eſtá en la ſangre y partes exterióres.

A. It is not that heat, which is ſetled about the heart, which is the cauſe of this fire, but that which is in the blood and exteriour parts.

G. Si peró no me negaréis, que el calór de la ſangre no proçéde de el, de el hígado.

W. Yea but you will not denie, but that the heat of the blood doth proceed from the heat of the liuer.

A. Aſſi es verdád, peró no óbra éſte eféćto en ſu orígen y fuente, ſi no quando ſe ha derramádo por las venas, y como la virtúd eſparzída, es mas fláca que quando eſtá vñida, ſi quando lo eſta es acometído el calór de ſu contrário el frío, y éſto confuérça y vehemência vénſe y resfría de ſuérte que no puede obrár ni hazér ſu efecto.

A. It is true, but it doth not worke this effect in the originall and fountaine, except when it hath ſpred it ſelfe by all the veines, and as the vertue diſperſed is more feeble then when it is vnited; ſo when it is ſo, the heat is ſet vpon by his contrary the cold, and this cold with force and vehemencie doth ouercome and coole in ſuch manner, that it cannot worke his effect.

D. Aſſi es, y la eſperiéncia de éſto ſe vée en los cabrónes, que es animál luxuriosíſſimo, y en llevándo le a tiérras frías, o no puede bivír, o pierde mucho de ſu poténcia.

I. So it is, and the experience of this is ſeene in great he-goats, which is a moſt luxurious beaſt, and in carrying him to cold countries, either he cannot line, or he loſeth much of his naturall ſtrength.

G. Los Faunos o ſemicápras, que los antiguos llamávan médios dióſes cuentan los autóres, y poetas, que éran en eſtrémo luxuriósos.

W. The Faunes or halfe goats which the ancient writers called halfe gods, authors and poets tell that they were wonderfully luxurious.

E. Es verdád, que úvo o ay táles hombres en en mundo llamados faunos?

G. Is it true, that there were and are ſuch men in the world called Faunes?

A. En la vida de Sant Páblo primér hermitaño ſe quenta, que en aquel deſiérto donde el hazía ſu penitençia, la hazía tanbien ſanto Antonio, el qual como por rebelacion ſupiéſſe como eſtáva allí cérca ſan Pablo, le fue aviçitár y en el camíno encontro con uno, el qual de la çinta para arriba, tenía forma perfecta de hombre, ſalvo que la cabeça tenia lléna de corne-

A. In the life of Saint Paul the firſt Hermit, they ſay, that in that deſart where he made his repentance, Saint Anthonie likewiſe made his, who by reuelation knowing he was neere Saint Paul, went to viſit him, and in the way met with one, which from the girdle vpward had the perfect forme of a man, except that he had his head full of little hornes, & from

cornequélos pequéños, y de médio para abajo éra cabrón con muy largas vedíjas, y pies de lo míſmo.

E. Hablava alguna coſa?

A. Si que el ſancto le habló, y le preguntó quien éra y el en un lenguáje muy bárvaro, pero tal que el ſancto le púdo entendér, le reſpondió, que era vno de los avitadóres de aquél deſiérto, a quien la çiega gentilidád adoráva por dióſes, peró que éran criatúras mortáles, y dixo mas a el ſanto, que ſu grey y génte le enbiáva a el por embaxador a rogar le a el Sancto, que rógaſe por todos a el commun Dios de todas las gentes, que bien ſavían que avia baxádo de el çielo y hecho ſe hombre por redimír a los hombres, y con eſto ſe fue por aquel deſiérto, con tanta ligeréza que en muy breve eſpáçio, le perdió de víſta el ſancto.

the middle downeward he was a he-goat with verie long ſhagge haire, and feet of the ſame.

G. Spake he any thing?

A. Yea, for Saint Anthonie ſpake vnto him, and asked him who he was, and he in a language verie barbarous, yet notwithſtanding ſuch a language that the holy man could vnderſtand, he answered him, that he was one of the inhabitants of that deſart, whom the blinde Gentiles worſhipped for Gods, but that they were mortall creatures, and ſaid moreouer to the Saint, that his people & nation ſent him to him for an ambaſſador to entreat the holy mã, that he ſhould pray for all of them to the common God of all nations, for wel they knew, that he was come downe frowm heauen, and being made man to redeeme mankinde, and herewithall he went thorow the deſart with ſuch ſwiftneſſe, that in ſhort ſpace the holy man loſt the ſight of him.

D. Yo he leýdo tanbien, que a el emperadór Conſtantino magno, le traxéron de eſſos deſiértos, otro bíbo, y lo eſtúbo muchos dias, y deſpues de muérto ſaládo, le traxéron por muchas partes de el mundo, para que todos le biéſſen.

I. Alſo haue I read, that they brought to the Emperour Conſtantine the great, out of thoſe deſarts, another aliue, & there he was many daies, and afterward being dead and ſalted, they carried him thorow many parts of the world, that all men might ſee him.

G. Bolviéndo a nueſtra primera plática, que os pareçe de eſta ciudád de Londres?

W. Turning to our firſt ſpeech, what doe you thinke of the citie of London?

A. A mi me paréçe, en verano tienda, y en inviérno contienda.

A. It ſeemes to me in ſummer a ſhop, and in winter a contention.

G. Como ſe entiende éſſo?

W. How is this to be vnderſtood?

A. Digo que paréçe, en veráno tienda, por que en aquel tiempo, todos los Señóres, cavalléros, y hidálgos, ſe ſalen fuera de ella, y ſe ván a ſus aldéas a paſſár el veráno, quedando en ella ſolos los oficiáles con ſus tiéndas abiértas.

A. I ſay it ſeemes in ſummer a ſhop, for that in that time, all the noble men, knights, and gentlemen, doe goe out of the citie, and they goe to countrey villages to paſſe ouer the ſummer, onely artificers remaining in it, with their ſhops open.

G. Y por que lo de mas?

W. And why the other?

A. En ynviérno ſon los términos, y como acúden de todo el réyno a élla

A. In winter are the termes, and out of euerie place of the kingdome, they come to

élla a ſus pléitos eſtá, hecha toda contiénda o pléito, peró vltra de eſto es vna de las mejores ciudádes de el mundo a lo que yo entiendo.

to it to their pleadings, and ſo it is made nothing but contention and wrangling in law, but beſides this it is one of the beſt cities in the world as far as I perceiue.

G. Que dezís de toda la tierra en generál?

W. What ſay you of the whole land in generall?

A. Que es fertiliſſima y abundante, de todas las coſas que ella produze, eſpeçíal de ganádos, déven de ſer los mas gruéſſos y mejóres de el mundo.

A. That it is moſt fruitfull, and abounding of all things, which it doth bring forth, eſpecially flocks of ſheepe, which are the greateſt and beſt of the world.

G. Y tanbien de ſemíllas es muy fértil.

W. And alſo of ſeeds it is very fertile.

A. Anſi es verdád, peró como no puede avér coſa perfecta en eſte mundo, ya que en eſſo es abundante, le fáltan otras coſas neçeſſárias, a la vida vmána, que ella por la frialdád de ſu ſitio, no puede produzir, y anſi tiéne neçeçidád, de comunicatión con otros réinos.

A. It is very true, but as there cannot be any thing perfect in this world, ſo although in this it abounds, yet other neceſſarie things are wanting in it, which are required to humane life, which through the coldneſſe of the ſituation, it cannot bring forth, and ſo it hath need of commerce with other nations.

G. Que coſas ſon eſſas, que dezís que le fáltan, que yo créo que no ay coſa en el mundo, que en ella no ſe halle.

W. What things are thoſe which you ſay, that are wanting in it, for I beleeue that there is not any thing in the world that in it is not found.

A. Es áſſi verdád, peró es comunicádo de otros réynos, que bien véys vos, que en ella no ſe cría óro ni pláta, no ſe coje vino, ni azéite, açúcar, ſéda, eſpeçiería, ni frútas de las regaládas, como ſon çídras, limónes, límas, naránjas, granádas, alméndras, y otros mil géneros de ellas, muy neçeſſários para el regalo de las gentes, y como dígo de éſtas pocas coſas, pudiéra dezír de otras muchas que déxo.

A. It is true, but it is brought from other countries, for well you ſee that in it neither groweth gold nor ſilver, nor wine, oyle, ſugar, ſilke, ſpice, nor fruits of the fineſt ſort, as are citrons, lymons, orenges, pomegranats, almonds, and a thouſand other kindes of them, very neceſſarie for the daintie feeding of men, and as I ſpake of theſe few things, I could ſay of many others which I leaue.

G. Si, peró tenémos otras, que ſírven en lugár de éſſas coſas, y anſi no las echámos menos, como çervéza por víno, mantéca por azéite, y otras ſemejántes.

W. Yea, but we haue others, which ſerue in ſtead of theſe things, and ſo we want them not, as beere for wine, butter for oyle, and others the like.

A. Con todo éſſo, ſería imposíble podér paſſár éſte réyno ſin comunicatión con otro, lo que no tiene Eſpáña, que ſola entre todas las provínçias de el mundo, podría paſſár ſin comunicatión con otra, por produzír, dentro de ſi todas

A. Notwithſtanding all this, it were impoſſible this kingdome could endure without commerce with others, which Spaine ſtandeth in no need of, for that alone among all the countries in the world might endure without communicating with

todas las coſas neceſſárias, a la vida vmána.

G. Pues, bien os podré yo dezír v'na cóſa, que Eſpáña no produze.

A. Qual es?

G. Eſpecieria, que al fin lo trácis de la yndia.

A. Tenéys razón, que éſſa ſóla le fálta a Eſpáña, pero, como vos dixiſtes, tanbien ſe cría en élla, con que ſe podria ſuplír éſſa fálta.

G. Que es?

A. En lugár de pimiénta, ſe cría vna yérua que llamámos pimiénto, cuya ſimiénte es de tanta fuérça, y de el própio efécto que la pimiénta, que viene de yndias, en lugár de clávos, vſan múchos de los ajos, y ſi no fuéſſe por vn mal olorzíllo que tienen, ſon mas ſabróſos que eſótros, de açafrán gran cantidad ſe coje en Eſpáña, gengíbre de pocos dias aca, ſe a començádo a plantár en élla, y ſe da bien.

G. A loménos no me negaréis, ſer mas fértil tiérra en general *Yngla-terra* que Eſpaña.

A. Digo que es verdád, y lo conçédo, peró tanbien os ſé dezír, que de éſſa fertilidád, viene la floxedád en las cárnes, y mantenimiéntos de ella, que ſon de poco nutrimiénto y ſuſtancia, y ésta es la cáuſa, de que los Yngléſes nos notáys a los Eſpañoles por miſerables en el comér, por que las carnes de Eſpáña, como de tierra mas eſtéril, ſon de tanto nutrimiénto que ſi comiéſſe de éllas vn hombre tanto como en Ynglaterra come, ſin dúbda ninguna, reventaría.

D. Por éſſo, ay uno manéra de dezír, comun en Eſpaña, Tu padre * çenó carnéro aſſádo, y acoſtó ſe, y murió ſe pues, no preguntes, de que murió.

A. En la própia Eſpaña tenémos la iſperiéncia de ésto que la *Andaluzía* que es tiérra mas fértil que

* *A prouince in Spaine.*

any other countrey, bringing forth within it ſelfe all thoſe neceſſarie things for mans life.

W. But well may I tell you one thing which Spaine affords not.

A. What is it?

W. Spice, which you fetch from the Indies.

A. You ſay true, for Spaine onely wants this, but as you haue ſaid alſo, there growes in it that which may ſupply this want.

W. What is it?

A. In ſtead of pepper there growes an herbe which we call pepper herbe, whoſe ſeed is of ſuch ſtrength, and of the very ſame effect the pepper is which comes from the Indies. In ſtead of cloues, many vſe garlicke, and if it were not for a little ſmell which it hath, they are more ſauourie then the other. Great quantitie of ſaffron is had in Spaine. Ginger not long ſince is begun to be planted therein, and it proſpereth well.

W. At leaſt you will not denie me, England generally to be a more fertile countrey then Spaine.

A. I ſay it is true, and I doe grant it, but alſo I can tell you, that of this fertilitie proceeds the faintneſſe of the fleſh there, and the ſubſtance of it, which is of ſmall nouriſhment and ſuſtenance, and this is the cauſe why the Engliſh men doe marke the Spaniards for pinching in their diet, for that the fleſh of Spaine, as of a countrey more barren, is of ſuch nouriſhment, that if a man ſhould eat of it ſo much as in England they eat, without doubt he ſhould burſt.

I. For this cauſe, there is a common ſaying in Spaine, Thy father ſupped with mutton roſted, and went to bed and died, doe not now aske whereof he died.

A. In Spaine we haue the experience of this, that in Andeluzia, *which is a country more fertile then* * *Eſtremadura*

que *Eſtremadúra*, las carnes de ella, no ſon con mucho de tanto nutrimiénto, ni tan buen ſavor, como eſtas otras.

E. Tanbien ſe vée éſſo en los yngléſes, que van a Eſpáña, que dízen que no puéden comér tanta carne allá, como comían acá.

G. Dezíme a óra, que os paréce, de el trato de nueſtra génte?

A. Generalménte hablándo, toda la gente yngléſa, es benína, y amoróſa, afáble, alégre, y amigos de regozíjos, y fieſtas, agénos de toda melancolía, como aquellos, en quien predomína el humór ſanguino, peró fuera de éſto, he notádo en todos en generál tan ynſatiáble avarícia, que deſdóra tódas ſus virtudes.

G. Y de las mugéres que dezís?

A. Las mugeres generalménte hablándo, piénſo que ſón las mas hermóſas de el mundo, por que tienen todas tres grácias particuláres, para ſer lo, que ſon en eſtrémo bláncas, coloradas, y rúbias, y la que con éſtas grácias que ſon generáles a todas, aciérta a tenér buenas faiciónes, es acabada en hermoſura: peró tanbien os dígo con la miſma generalidád, que tienen tres faltas.

G. Quales ſon por vida vueſtra?

A. No las quiſiéra dezír, por no caér, en deſgrácia con éllas.

G. Yo ſalgo por fiadór que no cairéis.

A ✻ Teneis razón, que quien nunca ſubió, no puede caer, peró las tres faltas ſon, pequeños ojos, grandes bócas, no buena tez en los roſtros, y de eſto es la cáuſa el áyre tan frío y ſutíl, que corre en eſtas partes, que ſe les cúrte y por eſto es buena la ynbinción la, de las mas carillas, aunque yo entiéndo que no deve de baſtár.

G. Vos lo avéys diſputádo muy bien, y yo os quédo muy aficionádo ſervidór, y aſſi os ſuplíco, que el tiempo que eſtubiéredes en eſta tiérra os ſirváis de mi.

A. Yo

madura, the fleſh is not by odds of ſuch nouriſhment nor of ſo good taſte as that of Eſtremadura.

G. Alſo it may be ſeene in Engliſhmen which goe into Spaine, which ſay that they cannot eat ſo much fleſh there, as they did eat here.

W. Tell me now, what you thinke of the Engliſh manner?

A. Speaking generally, all the Engliſh people are courteous and louing, affable, and merry, and louers of ſports and feaſts, free from all melancholie, as thoſe in whom doth predominate the ſanguine complexion: but beſides this I haue noted in generall, ſuch an inſatiable cometouſneſſe, as doth deface all their vertues.

W. And what ſay you of the women?

A. The women generally, I thinke they are the moſt faire of the world, for they haue all the three ſpeciall graces which make them ſo, they are wonderfully white and red, and that with theſe graces which are generall to all, there hapneth for them to haue ſuch good fauour, whereby they are moſt beautifull: but alſo I tell you with the ſame generalitie, that they haue three faults.

W. I pray you what are they?

A. I would not willingly tell them, leſt I fall into diſgrace with them.

W. I will be your ſuretie you ſhall not.

A. You ſay true, he that neuer gat vp, can neuer fall, but the three wants are little eies, great mouthes, and not very ſmooth skin in the face, and hereof the cauſe is, for that the aire is ſo cold and ſubtill in theſe parts, which doth tan them, and therefore maskes were wel inuented, although as I perceiue they helpe not.

W. You haue diſputed very well, and I remaine your affectionate ſeruant, and ſo I intreat you that the time you are in this countrey you ſo vſe me.

A. Yo os doy muchas grácias, por el ofreçimiénto, y quedo yo no ménos a vueſtro ſervíçio, y por que ſe va haziéndo tarde, nos vamos recojéndo alas poſádas que ya es óra.

A. I giue you many thanks for your offer, and I remaine no leſſe at your ſeruice, and becauſe it waxeth late, let vs betake our ſelues to our lodgings, for it is time.

G. Beſo a vueſtas merçédes las manos.

W. I kiſſe your hands.

D. Yo las de vuéſtas merçédes.

I. And I yours.

Diálogo ſéptimo, entre un ſargénto, y *un cavo de eſquadra, y un Soldado, en el* qual ſe trata, de las coſas perteneciéntes a *la malíçia, y de las calidádes que deve* tenér *un buen Soldado, con muchos dichos graçioſos y buenas quéntos.*

The ſeuenth Dialogue, betweene a Sergeant of a band, and a Corporall, and a Souldier, in which are handled matters pertaining to warfare, and the parts that a good ſouldier ought to haue, with many fine ſayings & good ſpeeches.

Sa. ADonde camina ſeñór ſoldádo?

Sa. WHither walke you ſouldier?

So. O Señór Sargento házia la tabla, ſi v.m. no manda otra cóſa.

So. O ſergeant, towards the dicing place, if you command no other matter.

Sa. Lleva muchos dinéros que jugár?

Sa. Doe you carry with you much money to play?

So. Mi paga enterita como la reçebí, que no he oſádo gaſtár vn reál, por no quirár ſe lo a el juégo.

So. My whole pay as I receiued it, for I durſt not ſpend one ſixpence thereof, leſt I ſhould take away ſo much from play.

Sa. Eſſo es de buenos coſrádes, antes falte para el cuerpo que para el juégo.

Sa. This is the part of good companions, let there be wanting for the body, rather then for play.

So. A que féria puedo yo yr, en que mas gane, pues aventúro con quatro ducados ganár quatro-cientos.

So. To what faire may I goe, wherein I may gaine more, ſeeing I venture with foure duckates, to gaine foure hundred.

Sa. Y ſi el dado díze mal, allá ván roçín y mançánas.

*Sa. If the die turne ill, there * goes horſe and apples.*

So. Señor o rico pijádo, o muerto des calabrádo.

So. Sir, either hanged rich, or dead with head broken.

Sa. Eſſa es la quénta de los perdídos.

Sa. This is the reckoning of caſt-awaies.

So. Cuerpo de tal ſeñor, que hijos o mugér tengo yo que mantenér?

So. Bodie of me, what children or wife haue I to keepe?

Sa. Si peró ne fuera mejór veſtír ſe que jugár el dinero?

Sa. Yea but were it not better to apparell your ſelfe, then to play away your money?

So. Yo he hecho mi quenta, y he menéſtér camiſas, jubón, ſayo, calçones, médias, y çapátos, y ſonbréro, y en quatro ducados, no ay para todo, pues conprár vno nuévo,

So. I haue reckoned with my ſelfe, I haue need of ſhirts, doublet, caſſocke, breeches, ſtockings, ſhooes, and hat, and in foure ducates, there is not for all this, for to buy one thing new

* *A horſe laden with apples paſſing a riuer was carried away, and ſo both loſt.*

évo, y traér lo otro viéjo, no pareçe bien, quiero jugár, quiça ganaré para comprár lo todo.

Sa. Y ſi los pierde, quedar ſe ha ſin lo vno y lo otro.

So. Señor, préſo por mil, préſo por mil y quiniéntos, todo es eſtár preſo, diré eſtonçes deſnudo naçí, y deſnúdo me hallo y deſnudo moriré.

Sa. Digame, ſáve quando entramos de guárdia?

So. Eſta nóche le toca a la compañiá.

Sa. Con que armas ſirve con pica, o arcabúz?

So. Con vn moſquéte de ſiete palmos.

Sa. Pues como dize, que no ſacó mas que quatro ducadas teniendo ſiete depaga.

So. Vno me deſcontáron de pólvora y cuerda los contadores, otro he dado a mi camarada para la deſpenſa de eſta ſemána, y otro que ſe me quitó de los * ſocorros.

Sa. juſta eſtá la quenta.

So. Es como la de el trillo, cada piedra en ſu agujéro.

Sa. Quantos ſon de camaráda?

So. Tres y con migo quatro.

Sa. Tantos pies tiene vn gato.

So. çinco con el rábo.

Sa. Tienen buen aloxamiénto?

So. Tal ſea la ſalud de el apoſentador que nos le dió.

Sa. Como no es bueno?

So. Peór es vna çahurda de lechónes.

Sa. Tienen huéſped hermoſa?

So. Hermoſa ſeñór ſarjénto, yo pienſo que los diablos ſon ſeraſines en ſu comparaçión.

Sa. Bueno es el encareçimiénto, que talle tiene?

So. Ella es mas viéja que *Metuſalen*, mas arugada que vna páſa, mas ſúzia que vna moſca, mas ſeca, que vn palo, diente y muela, como por la mano, la boca ſu-mída como ojo de culo, los ojos el vno tuerto, y el otro que no ſe le ſacaran con vn garavát o finalmente, toda ella es vn retrato

new and weare another old, ſeemes not well, I will play, peraduenture I ſhall get ſo much to buy all new.

Sa. If you loſe, you muſt goe without one and the other.

So. Sir, arreſted for a thouſand, taken for a thouſand fiue hundred, all is but to be arreſted, I will then ſay I was borne naked, and naked I finde my ſelfe, and naked ſhall I die.

Sa. Tell me, doe you know when we watch?

So. This night it fals to the companie.

Sa. What armes ſerue you with, a pike or ſhot?

So. With a muſket of ſeuen handfuls.

Sa. How then ſaid you, that you had but foure ducats, haning ſeuen for your pay?

So. One ducate defalked for powder and match, the other haue I giuen to my comerade for the charges of this weeke, and the other was taken out for lendings.

* *Succours or lendings which they giue ſouldiers when there is no pay, and when the pay comes, they take it off.*

Sa. The reckoning is very right.

So. It is euen as a threſhing floore, euery ſtone in his hole.

Sa. How many cabbin mates are you together?

So. Three, and with me foure.

Sa. So many feet hath a cat.

So. He hath fiue with the taile.

Sa. Haue all you good lodging?

So. I would to God ſuch were the health of the Furriel which gaue it vs.

Sa. How ſo, is it not good?

So. A pigſtie is worſe.

Sa. Haue you a faire Hoſteſſe?

So. Faire, maſter Sargeant, I thinke the deuils are Seraphims in reſpect of her.

Sa. You giue her good commendations, what handſomneſſe is in her?

So. Shee is more old than Methuſalem, *more wrinkled than a dried grape, or raiſin, more filthy than * a flie, more dry than a ſtick: teeth & chock teeth as in ones hand, the mouth ſunke in as the hole of the taile, the eyes one quite out, and the other ſo ſunke into her head that it cannot be pluckt out with a hook. In fine, all of her*

* *Which goeth and ſucketh euery filthy wound or carrion.*

retráto de la ynbídia.

Sa. Eſſa tal ſerá v'nico remédio contra luxúria.

So. Pues es lo bueno que con todas eſtas gráçias ſe afeita y repíca.

Sa. Y v. m. no le haze el amór?

So. Amór, o que boto a tal, no la acométa vn Tigre.

Sa. A'nde, que para vn lava dientes no ſerá mala.

So. Mas me los quiero traér ſúzios que no mal lavállos.

Sa. Mas yo créo, que es como dízen, ✻ quién díze mal de la yégua, eſſe la lléva.

So. Par diez, no ſoy ſi no como la zórra que quando no púdo alcançár las vbas, díxo vbas de parra, anſi como áſſi no las aviá gana.

Sa. Aqui viene el cávo de eſquadra, veámos que nuevas trác De donde viéne ſeñor cávo de es eſquadra?

Ca. De la bandéra.

Sa. Queda alli el alférez?

C. No ſeñor, que eſtá en cáſa de el capitán.

So. A el capitan y alférez déxo yo aóra en cáſa de el maeſtre de campo.

Sa. Que nuévas ay por alla?

Ca. Nuévas ciertas pocas, mentíras ynfinitas.

Sa. Que ſe dize aóra en el cuerpo deguardia?

Ca. Vnos dízen, que nos enbarcarémos para corrér la cóſta, otros que quedarémos aquí de preçidio, otros que yrémos a *Yrlanda*, no ay quien lo entiénda.

Sa. Todo eſſo es adivinár, cada vno lo que deſéa o le eſtá bien.

Ca. Como dezia el otro capitán, los ſoldados ſon profétas de el diablo.

Sa. Y tenía razón, porque aſſi como el diablo no ſáve lo por venír, ſi no que lo conjetúra aſſi házen ellos: y entre mil conjectúras que

her together is the very picture of Ennie.

Sa. Shee muſt needs be the onely remedy againſt luſt.

So. But this is the beſt of her, which with all theſe good graces is painted out and ſpoken of.

Sa. And doe you not make loue to her?

So. Loue, I ſweare by ſuch a one, a Tiger would not ſet vpon her.

Sa. Goe foole, ſhee is good enough to waſh ones mouth, and ſpet out againe.

So. I had rather they ſhould bring my clothes foule than ill waſhed.

Sa. But I beleeue, it is as they ſay, he that diſpraiſeth the mare carrieth her away.

So. By this ten bones, I am no otherwiſe than the fox, that when he could not reach the grapes, ſaid grape of the vine, ſo euen ſo that he had no ſtomacke to eat them.

Sa. Here comes the corporall, let vs ſee what newes hee brings. From whence come you corporall?

Co. From the colours.

Sa. Is the Ancient there?

Co. No ſir, he is at the captaines houſe.

So. The Captaine and Enſigne I left euen now in the Camp-maſters houſe.

Sa. What newes thereabout?

Co. Certaine newes very few, lies infinite many.

Sa. What ſay they now vpon the guard?

Co. One ſaies, we ſhall embarke our ſelues to skowre the coaſt, others that we ſhall remaine here in garriſon, others that we ſhall goe for Ireland, *none can tell what.*

Sa. All this is, euery one to geſſe at that which he doth himſelfe deſire, or liketh well of.

Co. As another captaine ſaid, Souldiers are prophets of the deuill.

Sa. And he ſaid well, for as the deuill doth not know, that which is to come, but by coniecture, ſo do they: & among a thouſand coniectures which they make,

que házen, alguna han de açertár.

Ca. Tanbien ſe ſuena que el rey de Eſpaña, árma para venír contra *Inglaterra.*

Sa. Venga en óra buena, ſi tráe muchos dinéros que dexárnos.

S. Yo con vna cadéna de óro que valga cien libras me conténto.

Ca. Pues afee que no las ſuelen vendér muy baratas los Eſpañóles.

So. Y yo con vna onça de plomo la piénſo comprár.

Ca. Eſſo es hazér quenta ſin la huéſpeda: y quiça yréis por lána, y bolveréis treſquiládo: que adonde las dan las tóman.

So. Señór, ſi me matáren, tal dia hízo vn año, tanbien murió mi aguélo, ya eſtá oluidado a éſſo jugámos, oy por mi, mañana por ti, no tengo hijos que dexár huérfanos, ni padre ni madre, ni perro que me ladre, ✻ muera *Marta* y muera hárta.

Ca. Plegue a dios que quando llegue la ocaçión no ſe calçe vnas calças de vílla *Diego.*

Sa. Señor tan buenos hombres ay por los pies como por las manos.

So. Por ſer mis oficiáles, vuéſtras mercédes me pueden dezír eſſo, peró ſi otro me lo dixéra, matára me con el.

Ca. No dezímos aquí, que lo hará, peró podriá aconteçér.

So. Tanbien ſe podría caér el çielo y nos cogería debaxo.

Sa. Demanéra que tanta dificultád ay en huyr v. m. como en caérſe el cielo.

Ca. El de la cama dize eſte ſoldádo.

So. No ſoy menór de edád que he meneſtér curadór, ſeñór cavo de eſquadra, yo ſabré reſponder por mi.

Ca. Siempre oy dezír, que vna buena obra ſepaga con vna mala.

So. ✻No

make, they are to hit vpon one.

Co. In like ſort, the rumor goeth that the king of Spaine *makes preparation to come againſt* England.

Sa. Let him come, if he bring good ſtore of crownes to leaue vs.

So. I would content my ſelfe with a chaine of gold, that were worth a hundred pound.

Co. But in faith the Spaniards are not wont to ſell them very good cheape.

So. And I hope to buy one with an ounce of lead.

Co. That is to reckon without the Hoſteſſe, and peraduenture you will goe for wooll, and returne home ſhorne, for where men giue there they receiue.

So. Sir, if they kill me, that day made vp iuſt a yeere, in like manner died my grand-father, and now is forgotten, at this we play, to day for me, to morrow for thee, I haue no children to leaue orphans, neither father, nor mother, nor dogge that barketh at me, * *let* Marta *die, yet let her die full.*

Co. I pray God that when triall ſhall be made, that you doe not * *put on the hoſe of the towne* Diégo.

Sa. Sir there are as good men of their feet as of their hands.

So. In that you are my officers, you may ſay this vnto me, but if another ſhould ſay ſo, I would fight with him.

Co. We doe not ſay here, that you would doe ſo, but it might happen.

So. As well might * el Cielo *fall, and then it would catch vs vnder.*

Sa. So then it is as hard a matter for you to run away as for the skie to fall.

Co. This ſoldier ſpeaketh of the * Cielo *of his bed.*

So. I am not in my nonage, that I need one to care for me, maſter Corporall I ſhall know how to anſwer for my ſelfe.

Co. I haue alwaies heard, that one good worke is requited with an euill.

So. Doe

* *A man hauing a wife named* Marta, *which he often beat for too much drinking, at laſt almoſt killing her ſhe ſaid,* Muera *Marta*, y muera harta.
* *i. Run away.*

* El cielo, *the skie. Alſo the teſter of a bed.*

* *i. Teſterne of the bed.*

So. ✻ No ſabe v. m. que eſtá vna higa en Róma para el que da conſéjo a quien no ſe le pide.

So. Doe you not know, that there is a flout for him in Rome, that gines counſell to him that requires it not at his hands.

Sa. No ſe enoje ſeñor ſoldádo que ſe hará viéjo antes de tiempo.

Sa. Be not angry maſter ſoldier, for it will make you old before your time.

So. ✻ No puede ya ſér mas negro el cuérvo que ſus álas.

*So. * The crow cannot be blacker than her feathers.*

* *It cannot be worſe then it is, or nothing can exceed the high-eſt degree.*

Sa. Señor cavo de eſquadra, vaya digale a el atambór que toque a recojer la guárdia.

Sa. Corporall goe and tell the drum that he ſound to ſet the watch.

Ca. Yo voy aguarde me aqui v. m.

Co. I goe, tarry for me here.

So. Señór ſargento déxeme yr a jugár vn ráto antes que ſe meta la guárdia.

So. Sargeant, let me goe play at dice a little before the watch be ſet.

Sa. Tanto le peſa eſſe dinero, que tal prieſſa tiene por echárlo de ſi.

Sa. So troubleſome is his money to him, that he haſteth to throw it from him.

So. Yo mas querría doblállo.

So. I would rather double it.

Sa. ✻ No ſave como díze vn refrán, ſi quieres tenér dineros tenéllos.

Sa. Doe you not know what the prouerbe ſaith, if you will haue money keepe it.

So. De que ſírve tenér pocos? o *Cæſar* o náda.

So. What good will a little doe one? either an Emperour or nothing.

Sa. Vaya con Dios, y pare lo a buen punto.

Sa. Goe in Gods name, and reſt when you are well.

So. Dios me libré de vn azár.

So. God keepe me from a hazard.

Sa. ✻ Y ami de vellácos en quadrilla, y villános en gavílla, de moça adivína, y de vieja latína, de lodos a el caminár, y de larga enfermedád, de párrafo de legiſta, de ynſra de canoniſta, de eçetera de eſcrivano, y de récipe de médico, de razón de diz que peró y ſi no, y de ſenténçia de conque.

*Sa. And me frõ knaues in my ſquadron, & clownes * in ſhocks together, from a maid that is a propheteſſe; and an old woman a latiniſt; from durt in iourneys; and from long ſickneſſe; from the paragraffe of the lawyer; from the infra of the Canoniſt; from the et cetera of the Scriuener; from the recipe of the Phyſitian; from that reaſon that ſaith, He ſaith that, but, if not; and from the ſentence of, with which.*

* *i. Multitudes together.*

Ca. Ya toca la caja a recojér.

Co. Now ſounds the drum to ſet the watch.

Sa. Vamos entre tanto a buſcár a el Sajento mayór, para que me de el nombre.

Sa. In the meane while let vs goe ſeeke the Sergeant major, that he may giue me the word.

Ca. El eſtará en caſa de el generál.

Co. He will be at the generals houſe.

Sa. Vamos allá, que todo es camíno, es meneſtér que ésta noche aya muy buena guárdia.

Sa. Let vs goe thither, for it is all in our way, it is needfull to night that there be a good guard.

Ca. Por que ay alguna ſoſpecha?

Co. Why, is there any ſuſpition of any thing?

Sa. Ay nuévas de enemigos, y aſſi es neçeſſário doblár las poſtas y reforçarlas, y ponér dos otres çentinelas

Sa. There is newes of the enemy, & therefore needfull to double the ſet men to watch, and to make them ſtrong, and

çentinelas perdidas y que la ronda y contra ronda visíten amenúdo.

Ca. Pida v.m.a el ſargento mayór, que nos den leña harta, para que aya buena lumbre en el cuerpo de guárdia.

Sa. Anſi ſerá, y todas las armas eſtarán ✠ muy apunto que hombre aperçevído, médio combatído.

Ca. Meneſtér ſerá dar a los ſoldados pólvora, cuérda, y balas.

Sa. Todo ſe les dará y órden a los coſeletes que no les falte piéça.

Ca. Qual es la mejór árma de las que vſámos en la guerra?

Sa. La pica es la réyna de las ármas.

Ca. Poco valdrián las pícas, ſino ſe guarneſiéſſen con la arcabuçería, que dáña a el enemígo deſde a fuera.

Sa. Menos valdría la arcabuzería, ſi deſpues de dada la carga, no tuvieſſe adonde repararſe de la cavalleriá enemíga, y de todos los demás que le procuráren dañár.

Ca. Si, peró bien vemos que mayór daño ſe le haze a el enemígo con la arcabuzería, y moſquetería, que con las picas.

Sa. Todo éſſe daño es poco en comparación de el que ſe reçibe a el deſbarate de vn eſquadrón o exérçito, el qual ſeſiguiría luego con la cavalleria, ſi las pícas que es vna murálla fuerte, no ſe puſieſſen ala defenſa.

Ca. Por éſſo compáran a vn eſquadrón bien formado, a el cuerpo vmáno donde los braços, y piernas, que ſon los que óbran ſon los arcabuzéros y las picas que eſtán ſiempre firmes, y es de dó viene virtúd, a todas las partes de el eſquadrón, el cuerpo y coraçón.

Sa. Aſſi es, y aunſi miráis la forma de vn eſquadrón de los ordinários formado, con ſus mángas, hallaréis en el, la miſma forma de el cuerpo vmáno.

Ca. Que partes ſe requiére que tenga vn buen ſoldádo?

Sa. Muchas

*and to put two or three * loſt centinels, and that the round & counterround may goe very thicke.*

* *Thoſe that lie cloſe vnder the enemie to beare that they ſay and doe.*

Co. Require of the Sargeant maior, that he giue vs wood enough, that there be a good fire vpon the bodie of the guard.

Sa. So it ſhall be, and all the armes to be very ready, for a man well warned halfe armed.

Co. It will be needfull to giue to the ſouldiers powder, match, bullets.

Sa. All ſhall be giuen them, and order for the corſlets that they want no peece.

Co. Which is the beſt weapon, of thoſe we vſe in warre?

Sa. The pike is the queene of weapons.

Co. Of little anaile were pikes, if they were not lined with ſhot, which hurteth the enemie a far off.

Sa. Of leſſe anaile were the ſhot, after they had diſcharged, if they had no place to defend themſelues from the enemies horſmen, & all the reſt which ſhould endeuour to offend them.

Co. Yea, but we well ſee, that greater dammage is made to the enemie, by ſmall ſhot and musket, then with pikes.

S. All this dammage is little in compariſon of that is receiued at the ouerthrow of a ſquadron or armie, the which would follow ſtraight with the horſe, if the pikes, which is a ſtrong wall, did not put themſelues in defence thereof.

C. Hereby they compare a ſquadron well in order, to a mans bodie, where the armes and legs which are thoſe that worke, are the ſhot and the pikes which ſtand alwaies firme, and from whence proceed force to all the parts of the ſquadron, to the bodie and heart.

S. So it is, and alſo if you marke well the faſhion of a ſquadron of the ordinarie ſquadrons made with his wings, you ſhall finde in it the very faſhion of a mans bodie.

C. What parts are required in a good ſouldier?

S. Many

Sa. Muchas, y muchos eſcriviéron de éſſa matéria, peró las mas neçeſſárias y ordinárias, yo las diré. El ſoldádo, quanto a lo priméro, deue ſer muy honróſo, porque ſoldádo ſin hónra ſería de ningun provécho, pues ella es la eſpuéla que le ha de hazér obrár lo, que no báſtan prémios, ni ruégos, ni amenázas de ſus oficiáles.

Ca. Por eſſo, deve el ſoldado traér, ſiempre eſcrita en la frénte aquella ✲ coplilla que díze, por la honra pon la vida, y pon las dos, honra y vida por tu Dios.

S. Lo ſegundo deve ſér el ſoldado valiente, no temeróſo ni covarde.

C. ✲ El ſoldado covarde mas propiaménte ſe podría llamár eſpantájo, al qual quando los páxaros le pierden una vez el miédo, ſe aſientan ençíma de el, o como el Rey de las ránas.

S. Como es éſſo de el Rey de las ránas?

C. Dizen, que en tiempo de mari caſtáña, las ránas deſſeáron tenér Rey como todas las demas naçiones, y pidiéron a *Iupiter* que era Rey de los dióces que les diéſſe Rey el qual viéndo ſu neçedád quiſo burlár de ellas, y díxo les que para un dia ſeñaládo les daría Rey, ellas le eſperávan con grande alegría, y venído aquel diá, ſaliéron todas, de ſus caſas, muy compueſtas, como convenía para reçebír a ſu réy y puſiéron ſe en la ſuperfiçie de el água eſperando; en eſte tiempo *Iupiter* arrojó deſde el çielo, vn gran madéro, que dió con el, en la laguna donde, ellas eſtávan, tan gran golpe, y hízo tan gran ruído que ellas fuéron todas turbadas, y aſombradas, y unas por aquí, y otras por alli, cada una huyó a ſu caſa, ſin oſár llegár, a hazér a ſu rey el devído acatamiénto, ni ſalír fuera en muchos dias quedó ſe el madéro nadándo ençima de el agua, y ellas con tanto temór

S. *Many, and many haue written of this matter, but the moſt neceſſarie & ordinarie I will tell you. The ſouldier touching the firſt point, ought to be honourable, for a ſouldier without honour would profit little, becauſe it is the ſpur which driues him on to effect that, which rewards are not ſufficient to doe, nor intreaties, nor threatnings of his officers.*

C. *Therefore the ſouldier ſhould carry alwaies written in his forchead this verſe, which ſaith, For thy honour hazard thy life, and hazard them both, honour and life for thy God.*

Sa. *The ſecond, the ſouldier ought to be valiant, and not fearefull nor coward.*

Co. *A cowardly ſouldier may better be called, a thing made to feare away crowes, that when the birds doe once caſt off their feare of the ſame, they ſit on the top of it, or as the king of frogs.*

Sa. *How is that of the king of frogs?*

Co. *They ſay, in old time, when beaſts could ſpeake, the frogs deſired to haue a king, as other nations had, and they requeſted* Iupiter, *which was king of the gods, that he would giue them a king, which ſeeing their ſimplicitie, would needs mock them a little, and told them that by a day appointed, he would giue them a king: they waited for it, with great ioy, and the day being come, all of them came forth out of their houſes, well attired, as was fit for the receiuing of a king, and put themſelues vpon the vpper part of the water waiting: then* Iupiter *caſteth downe from heauen a great blocke, which lighted in the lake where they were: it gaue ſuch a blow, and made ſuch a noiſe, that they were all troubled, & amaſed; ſome this way, others that way, euery one ran home to his houſe without daring to come neere, to make their due reuerence to their king, nor to come forth a doores in many daies. The beame remained*

mór de vér cosa tan grande, que ninguna osáva salír fuera de su casa, y alli morían de hambre, hasta que poco apoco fue saliéndo la mas esforçada, y siguiéndo la las demas, cada dia yvan perdiéndo mas el temór, y se yvan llegando çerca de su rey, viéndo le a el tan manso y que no se movía, ni les dezía mala palábra, al fin tanto continuáron y (como la mucha conversación es causa de menosprécio) se llegáron a su rey y viendo todas lo que éra, saltáron encíma de el, y començáron a cheriár y dar grandes risádas, haziéndo burla de su Rey, y de su temor passádo bolviéron pues, a ynsistír a *Iupiter* que en todo cáso les diésse Rey no tan mánso, si no que fuésse justiciéro, *Iupiter* viendo su neçia porfía les ymbió por Rey a la çigueña, la qual réyna hasta oy entre ellas, çebando se y comiendolas cada dia en pena de su loca petición, pues pudiendo bivír libres quisiéron mas hazér se esclávas y mas vn Rey cruél, que mánso y benígno.

ned there swimming vpon the water, and they with such feare, to see a thing so great, that none of them durst once goe out of his dores, & therin they died with hunger, vntill that by little and little, the most hardiest of them went out, and the rest following, euery day they went more and more, losing their feare, & they went neerer to their king, seeing him so gentle, and that he moued not, nor said neuer an ill word to them, in the end they continued so long, & (as much familiaritie oftentimes breeds contempt) they approched to their king, and seeing all of them what he was, they leaped vpon him, and they began to croake and to breake out into great laughters, making a iest of their king, and of their own passed feare: they returned afterward to importune Iupiter, *that by all meanes he would giue them a king, but not so still and quiet, but that he should be a iusticer*; Iupiter *seeing their fooliſh importunitie, sent the* Storke *to them for a king, the which reigneth till this day among them, fatting himself, and eating them vp euery day, as a punishment for their fond request, when they might haue liued at liberty, they would make themselues slaues, and rather set vp a cruell king, then a benigne and gentle.*

Sa. No ha estádo malo el quento, y mejór es la moralidád.

Sa. The tale hath not beene ill, yet better is the morall thereof.

Ca. Dexémos éſſo aóra, y prosíga v. m. adelánte con su plática de el buen soldádo.

Co. Let vs leaue this, and goe forward with your speech of the good souldier.

Sa. Lo tercero que ha de tenér ha de ser gran sufridór de travájos, y para esto deve ser de rézia complexión.

Sa. The third that he is to haue, is to be a great endurer of trauels, and for this he should be of a strong complexion.

Ca. Y a el que ésso no tuviére, el diáblo ✻ le trúxo a la guérra, como dízen de el moço vergonçóso, que el diablo le trájo a paláçio.

Co. And he that hath not this, the Deuill brought him to the warre, as it is said hee brought the blush-faced young man to the Court.

Sa. Deve tanbien ser muy obediénte a sus oficiáles, y que haga de buena gana y sin mostrár mal Rostro lo que le ordenáren siendo de el servício de la Réyna.

Sa. He ought also to be very obedient to his officers, and that hee performe that obedience with a good will, and without shewing an ill countenance to that they shall ordaine, being for the Queenes seruice.

Ca. Quiten le a la milicia la obediénçia

Co. Let them take away obedience in souldiers

çia en los ſoldados, y bolver ſe ha en confuſión *Babilónica.*

Sa. Otras muchas particulatidádes, ha de tenér el buen ſoldádo, que yo no quiero tratár aora, quien las qui ſiére vér, léa quatro o çinco tratádos que andan de ello en lengua Eſpañola vno de el capitan *Martin* de *Eguilúz*, y otro de *Eſcaláante*, otro de don *Fernando* de *Cordua*, y otro de don *Bernardino* de *Mendóza*, que alli lo verá bien pintádo.

Ca. A qui buelve nueſtro moſquetéro, muy cabizbájo viéne, perdido deve de avér.

Sa. A ſeñór ſoldado vna palabra.

So. Dexe me v. m. ſeñor Sarjento, baſta me mi m la ventura.

Sa. Que ha ſido, perdióſe toda el armada?

So. No topára yo aqui aóra con el velláco que eſte juego ynventó.

Sa. Que le quería dezír?

So. Reniego del diablo, ſi no le avía de hazér mas tajádas que púntos ſe han echádo en los dados des pues que el los ynventó.

Sa. * Eſſo me parece echár la culpa de el aſno a la aluárda quien le mandó a v. m. jugár?

So. El Diablo que no duerme, y anda tras hazérme deſeſperar para llevárme.

Sa. Pues mire no le crea, ſino quando venga, diga le que por aora no puede yr, que eſtá ocupado en ſerviçio de ſu mageſtad, que ſe buelva otro día, y ſi no quiſiére deshagale la horquílla en la cabéça.

So. Muy bueno va eſſo, eſtóy yo rabiándo y eſta ſe v. m burlando de mi.

Sa. Mire, yo le daré un buen remédio tomo dos onças de jaráve de paçiéncia, y quatro de unguénto de oluído, y beualo todo, y con ello purgará éſſa malenconía y quedará luego buéno.

So. Serán dos purgas una tras otras deſpues

diers in war, and it will turne to a Babilonicall *confuſion.*

Sa. The good ſouldier is to haue many other particulars, which I will not now handle, whoſoeuer will ſee them, let him reade foure or fiue treatiſes which handle it in the Spaniſh tongue, one of captaine Martin Eguiluz, *another of* Eſcalante, *another of* Don Fernando de Cordua, *and another of* Don Bernardin Mendoza, *there may it be ſeene well ſet out.*

Co. Here comes backe againe our musketier, he comes hanging downe his head, it is likely he hath loſt.

Sa. Ho Souldier a word with you.

So. Let me alone Sergeant, it is enough that I haue ill lucke.

Sa. What hath hapned, is all the fleet loſt?

So. I would not meet now with that villaine that inuented this play.

Sa. What would you ſay to him?

So. I renounce the deuill, if I would not giue him more flaſhes then hee hath ſet pricks on dice, ſince he inuented them.

Sa: This ſeemes to me, to put the fault of the aſſe on the packeſaddle. Who commanded you to play?

So. The deuill which ſleeps not, and followes after me to driue me into deſpaire, that he might carry me away.

Sa. Then marke what I ſay, doe not beleeue him, but when he commeth tell him, that for this time you cannot goe, that you are imployed in her Maieſties ſeruice, that he come another day, and if he will not, clap your muſquet ſtaffe on his pate.

So. This goes well, I ſtand raging, and you mocking.

Sa. Behold, I will giue you a good remedie; Take two ounces of the ſirrupe of patience, and foure ounces of the oile of forgetfulneſſe, and drinke it off, and with this you ſhall purge this melancholy, and forthwith you ſhall be well.

So. That will be two purges one after another

pues de purgada la bolſa purgár el cuérpo.

Sa. Pues nunca ha oydo dezír, que un clavos ſáca otro, y una máno lava otro, y entrambas la cara.

Ca. Pues como ſe dió tan preſto fin ala triſte tragédia.

So. Yo les diré a vueſtras merçédes como fue, el me dió a parár a onze, paré le quatro reales, echóme un enquentro, y tirómelos.

Sa. Mal prinçipio.

So. Antes ſuelen dezír, que es buen pronóſtico perder la primer a mano.

Ca. No ay regla tan generál que no tenga eçepçión.

So. Dióme a parar luego a doze, que es mi ſuerte, paréle ocho reáles, écho un azár, díxe repárolos; otorgó me el repáro, lançó el dádo, y echó otro azár.

Sa. Pues pecadór, para que queríades mas de avér ganádo con quarenta otros quarenta, que mercadér ay que gane a çiento por çiento.

So. Señor, yo no me contenté ſino quíſe arrancár las clavos de la meſa como dízen, y díxe ſiete y llevar, dixo me, digole, Relança y echa ſu ſuerte, y arrebuja cõ todo * ami dexóme del agalla, ſin blanca como el diablo ſe aparecio a ſan *Benito*.

Ca. * Siempre lo verá, que quien todo lo quiere todo lo pierde.

So. * Mas ſiempre deſpues de ydo el conéjo viene el conſejo.

Sa. * Aóra bien quien érra y ſe enmiénda a Dios ſe encomienda.

So. La enmiénda ſerá empeñár el capotíllo, para bolvérme a eſquitár ſi puedo.

Sa. Eſſa no ſerá enmiénda ſino obſtinaçión.

So. * Aqui perdí vna agúja, aqui la tengo de hallár.

Sa. No veis pecadór que ſe os cayó en la mar eſſa agúja, como la quereis hallár?

So. Yo

other, after the purſe is purged to purge the bodie.

Sa. Hane you neuer heard, that one naile drieth out another, one hand waſheth another, and both of them the face.

Co. But how made you ſuch a quicke end of the ſad tragedie?

So. I will tell you how it was, he chanced me a eleuen, I ſet him two ſhillings, he caſt and drew them.

Sa. An ill beginning.

So. Rather they are wont to ſay, it is a good ſigne to loſe the firſt hand.

Co. There is no rule ſo generall which hath not ſome exception.

So. He chanced me forthwith twelue which is my chance, I ſet him foure ſhillings, he caſt a hazard, I ſaid I ſet againe, he allowes of it, he throwes the dice, & caſts another hazard.

Sa. Why wretched ſinner, what would you more then to gaine with ſortie other ſortie, what marchant is there which doth gaine a hundred for a hundred?

*So. I was not content, but would pull in peeces the nailes of the table as they ſay, and I ſaid I ſet ſeuen times ſo much as he drew, he ſaid content, I ſay content. He throwes againe the dice, and he drew vp all, and ſo he left me * hanging on the gill, without a farthing, as the deuill appeared to Saint* Benit. * As a fiſh.

Co. You ſhall alwaies ſee, he that all coueteth, all loſeth.

So. But after the ſteed ſtollen, ſhut the ſtable doore.

Sa. Now he that erres and amends, to God himſelfe commends.

So. The mends will be to pawne the caſſocke to go againe to quit my ſelfe if I can.

Sa. This will not be an amends, but obſtinacie.

So. Here loſt I a needle, and here hope I to finde it againe.

Sa. Doe you not ſee, that this needle fell into the ſea, how will you now finde it?

So. I

So. Yo me tengo de yr a vna hechizéra, que me de vna soga de ahorcádo, que dizen que es buena para hazér ganár.

Ca. ✠ Castiga me mi madre y yo trómpose las.

Sa. A ora señór vamos por aóra a merér le guárdia, que despues se tratara de esso.

Ca. Vaya a llamar sus camarádas.

So. Yo voy, béso a vuéstras mercedes las manos.

Ca. Yo tambien quiero yr por mis armas.

Sa. Yo me voy a la vandéra, alli esperaré.

So. I am to go to a witch, that she may give me a rope of a hanged man, which they say is good to make one win.

Co. My mother doth chastice me, and I mocke and mow at it.

Sa. Now sir, let us go then now to set the watch, for afterwards we will talke hereof.

Co. Goe and call your Camerádoes.

So. I goe, I take my leave of you.

Co. I will also goe for my armes.

Sa. I goe to the colours, there will I tarry.

FINIS.